

A
NEW SPANISH GRAMMAR;
OR, THE
ELEMENTS
OF THE
SPANISH LANGUAGE.

CONTAINING
An EASY and COMPENDIOUS METHOD
to Speak and Write it correctly :

With several useful REMARKS on the most particular IDIOMS, and
FUNDAMENTAL RULES, shewing how to make Use of them, both
in SPEAKING and WRITING :

The Whole extracted from the best Observations of SPANISH
GRAMMARIANS, and particularly of the
ROYAL SPANISH ACADEMY OF MADRID :

TO WHICH IS ADDED,
AN ENGLISH GRAMMAR,
For the Use of SPANIARDS.

By H^TO SAN JOSEPH GIRAL DELPINO.

A NEW EDITION,
Carefully Revised and Improved,
By RAYMUNDO DEL PUEYO, M. A.

Ne parva averferis ; inest sua gratia parvis. DAM.

L O N D O N :
PRINTED FOR F. WINGRAVE, SUCCESSOR TO MR. NOURSE,
IN THE STRAND.

1800.

Luke Hansard, Printer, near Lincoln's-Inn Fields.

PROLOGO AL LECTOR.

CREYO la ciega *gentilidad*, que era ciega la Fortuna, sin duda porque eran ciegos los que sin llegar á penetrarla, intentaron dibuxarla. Esta misma ceguedad tienen algunos de los muchos, que desean aprender los idiomas extrangeros, quienes llevados de la corriente de su loca presumpcion, no quieren adocenarse á las reglas de un maestro idoneo.

Pocos habra que nieguen la utilidad de la Gramatica, si se considera como medio indispensable para aprender alguna Lengua extraña. Pero muchos dudaran tal vez que sean necesarios todos los rudimentos de ella, pareciendoles suficiente el conocimiento que quiza tendran de la Latina.

No lo pensaban así los Griegos ni los Romanos : pues, sin embargo de que para ellos eran tan comunes la Lengua Griega y Latina como para cada uno lo es la suya propia, tenian gramaticas y escuelas para estudiarlas, conocian la utilidad y necesidad del uso ; pero conocian tambien que convenia perfeccionarle con el arte. Si así lo practicaban estas naciones con las Lenguas nativas quanto mas lo deben practicar los que hoy desean aprender las extrañas ?



Perdoname, lector mio, si te hablo con esta claridad ; pues he encontrado con algunos de mis discipulos, que, teniendo

P R E F A C E.

IT was usual with the ancients to paint Fortune without eyes; no doubt, because they who so attempted to represent her were too blind to penetrate the motives upon which she acted: the same may be said of those, who desire to cultivate an acquaintance with foreign languages, but who, from too much confidence in themselves, are above submitting to the Rules of Grammar, and to a Master, however qualified he may be.

Few will deny the utility of Grammar, when they consider it as indispensably necessary for learning a Foreign Tongue; but many seem to doubt the necessity of studying its particular rudiments, from an opinion that a previous knowledge of the Latin will of itself sufficiently answer their purposes.

The ancient Greeks and Romans, however, were of a different opinion; for, although the Greek and Latin Languages were as common to them as every vernacular language is to its respective nation, they had, notwithstanding, Grammars and public schools for the sole purpose of studying them. They well knew the necessity and advantages of practice, but at the same time they were sensible that art and study are necessary to perfection. If these enlightened people applied with so much labour to their native tongues, how much more necessary is it to those who desire to learn a foreign one at this day?

The reader will pardon my speaking with so much sincerity; but in the course of my employment as a professor, I

PROLOGO AL LECTOR:

por fejudez pueril el sugetarse á las reglas, que prescribe la Gramática, han querido inmediatamente componer, sin saber todavía el orden, y concierto, que deben tener entre si las partes de la oracion, ó la sintaxis particular del idioma, que se proponian aprender. Pero que es lo que acontece á estos tales? En lugar de anhelar al adelantamiento, pierden el dinero y la paciencia, aburren á sus maestros, y al cabo de algun tiempo, se hallan muy atrasados del progreso que sin duda hubieran hecho, si se hubiesen sometido de buena fé, baxo la instruccion del zeloso maestro.

Los rudimentos de la Gramática, son la llave que abre la puerta á su inteligencia, ella nos hace ver el maravilloso artificio de la lengua, ensenañdonos de que partes constan sus nombres, definiciones, y oficios, y como se juntan y enlazan, para formar el texido de la oracion.

Sobre ninguna de estas cosas se hace reflexion antes de entender el arte; y así es difícil que sin el hablemos con propiedad, exactitud, y pureza.

Con esta intención he procurado, quanto mis tareas cotidianas me han permitido, corregir la Gramática de Del Pino, ó por mejor decir, componerla de nuevo. Pues rara palabra he observado en ella, que no haya merecido mi correccion, u abolicion total, substituyendo otra propia en su lugar, acortando muchos dialogos verdaderamente indignos de la estampa, y del oido del discipulo inocente que los estudia.

Tres Editiones de la Gramática Española, é Inglesa han sido publicadas en esta ciudad de Londres, por Estivens, Pinedz,

P R E F A C E.

have met with many, who, regarding subjection to the Rules of Grammar as a puerile task, have been desirous of composing even without knowing the order and connection between the different Parts of Speech, or the particular Syntax of the Language which they intended to learn. But what is the consequence of such conduct? Instead of making any progress, they throw away their time and money, distract their teachers, and, at the end, find themselves very far from the improvement which they would have undoubtedly made if they had submitted themselves to the instructions of an intelligent master.

Grammar is the key by which alone a door can be opened to the understanding of speech. It is Grammar which reveals the admirable art of language, which unfolds its various constituent parts, its names, definitions, and respective offices, and unravels, as it were, the threads of which the web of speech is composed.

These reflections seldom occur to any one before his acquaintance with the art; yet, it is certain, that without a knowledge of Grammar, it is very difficult to speak with propriety, precision, or purity.

To obtain this end, I have, as far as the multiplicity of my avocations have permitted me, corrected Del Pino's Grammar of the Spanish Language; or, to speak more properly, composed it anew, as there are few words which it was not necessary to correct or entirely expunge, and substitute in their place others more proper, especially in the dialogues, many of which I have been under the necessity of considerably curtailing, as unworthy of the press and of the ear of the uninformed student.

Three Editions of a Spanish and English Grammar have been published in London, viz. by Stevens, Pineda, and Del Pino.

PROLOGO AL LECTOR.

neda, y Del Pino ; sabemos que todos estos authores fueron extranjeros. No obstante, este ultimo tenia alguna idea de la Lengua Española: pero como para publicar un tal libro, no solamente se requiere, que el author sea nativo en el idioma que publica, sino tambien gramatico de ambas lenguas, propia, y Latina. No es de maravillar, que las ediciones anteriores á esta hayan estado llenas de errores: incompletas, y faltas enteramente tanto del accento, como de la verdadera pronunciacion Española para los que desean aprender esta hermosa lengua.

Uno de los puntos principales, que dichos authores dexaron en el tintero, y en que consiste la parte essencial de la Syntaxis, de la Gramatica Española es saber, que proposiciones piden despues de si algunos verbos, y otras partes de la oracion ; para este fin, me he valido de la Gramatica de la Academia de Madrid de la qual he extrahido una lista alphabetica que ordeno en tres columnas ; en la primera pongo los verbos, y palabras que rigen preposicion ; en la segunda las preposiciones regidas ; y en la tercera las palabras regidas de las preposiciones. Con lo qual apenas habra duda alguna sobre el regimen de que no se pueda salir a primera vista.

La Gramatica que ahora te offrezco está bien corregida, revista, y muy aumentada. Por ella prometo instruirte en poco tiempo si con docilidad te sujetares á sus rudimentos. Vale.

Ne quis tanquam parva, fastidiat Grammatices elementa. Non quia magnæ sit operæ consonantes a vocalibus discernere, easque in semivocalium numerum mutarumque partiri: sed quia interiora velut
sacri

P R E F A C E.

Pino. It is sufficiently known that all these authors were foreigners. This last indeed had some notion of the Spanish Language; but as, for an undertaking of this nature, it is requisite not only that the language should be that of the Author's own native country, but that he should be intimately acquainted with the idioms, both of his own, and of the Latin Language, it is not at all surprising that the former editions have been so replete with inaccuracies; that there should have been so many omissions and so many errors, both in the accent and in the true pronunciation of the Spanish: it must also be confessed, that this is prejudicial to those who are desirous of learning this beautiful language.

One of the principal points which these authors have omitted, and which constitutes a great part of the Spanish Syntax, is the government of prepositions by verbs, and other parts of speech. To remedy this inconvenience, I have availed myself of the Grammar lately published by the Spanish Academy of Madrid, from which I have extracted an alphabetical list, divided into three columns: in the first I have placed the verbs, and words which govern the prepositions; in the second, the prepositions governed: and in the third, the words governed by the prepositions; by the help of which there can hardly be any doubt respecting the government of the prepositions, which may not be easily solved at first sight.

The Grammar which I *now* offer to the Public, is revised, corrected, and considerably improved; and I flatter myself, that he who attends diligently to its rules, will make great progress in a short time. Vale.

sacri hujus a decentibus, apparebit multa rerum subtilitas, quæ non modo acuta ingenia puerilia, sed exercere altissimam quoque eruditionem ac scientiam possit. QUINCT.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

CHAP.	PAGE
I.—Of Grammar, and its Parts - - -	I
II.—Of Letters, and their Pronunciation - -	6
III.—Of the Declension of Articles and Nouns - -	11
IV.—Of Verbs - - - - -	18

PART II.

I.—Of Syntax - - - - -	133
II.—Of Nouns - - - - -	136
III.—Of the Construction of Nouns Substantive -	141
IV.—Of Pronouns, and their Construction - -	145
V.—Of Verbs, and their Construction - - -	152
VI.—Of Prepositions - - - - -	167
VII.—Of Adverbs, Conjunctions, and Interjections -	171
Observation to serve as a Supplement to the Syntax -	195

A List of VERBS in Three Columns. The First, contains the Words which govern the Preposition; the Second, the Prepositions governed; and the Third gives an Example of the Words which are governed by the Prepositions - - - 233

A VOCABULARY, containing such Words as most frequently occur in common use - - - 273

Familiar Phrases - - - - - 214

Familiar Dialogues, Spanish and English - - - 241

Fables, Spanish and English - - - - - 312

Letters and Examples of Mercantile Correspondence, Spanish and English - - - - - 323

GRAMATICA INGLESA, para los ESPAÑOLES - 340

THE
ELEMENTS
OF THE
SPANISH GRAMMAR.

PART I.

CHAP. I.

Of GRAMMAR, and its Parts.

BECAUSE a great many are not versed in the *Latin* tongue, I thought it necessary to begin by the Explanation of terms used in Grammar; which being well known, there is no difficulty to understand Grammar.

DEFINITIONS.

GRAMMAR is the art of speaking and writing a language correctly.

The SPANISH GRAMMAR, as all other books, is composed of words, all words are composed of letters, and all letters are either Vowels or Consonants.

Vowels are five; A, E, I, O, U; they are so called, because they form a sound of themselves; the other letters are called Consonants, because they form a sound with one of the vowels.

All words are either a Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle, Preposition, Adverb, Conjunction, Interjection, or Article.

Many words joined together make a sentence or proposition; as, *Peter is my friend.*

B

A Noun

A Noun is a thing we see or feel, or of which we may form a discourse ; as, *the earth, a table, a looking-glass.*

Nouns are of two sorts, Substantives and Adjectives.

A Noun Substantive is so called, because it subsists of itself, and signifies something alone ; but the Noun Adjective must be joined to another noun, to have a meaning ; as, a *black horse*. Horse is the Substantive, and *black* the Adjective.

A Noun Substantive is either proper or common ; proper, as *Alexander, Frederic, George, Mary, London, Madrid* ; common, as *king, lord, man, woman, table, &c.*

All proper Nouns are declined in Spanish with these particles, *de, a* ; but the Common Nouns are declined with the articles *el, la, and lo.*

The use of Articles is to shew of what gender, of what number, and in what case the nouns are. There are three Genders, Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter ; and only two Numbers, Singular and Plural.

The Nouns have six Cases, the Nominative, Genitive, Dative, Accusative, Vocative, and Ablative.

The Nominative Case names the thing, or the person ; as, *the sun shines*. *The sun* is the Nominative.

The Genitive Case shews that either one thing proceeds from another, or belongs to it ; as, *the coach of the King ; the water of the river.*

The Dative gives ; as, *I give a book to my master*. *To my master* is in the Dative Case, because I give the book to him.

The Accusative Case is governed by the Verb Active ; as, *the King loves the English*. *The English* are in the Accusative Case, because they are governed by the Verb Active, *love*.

The Vocative calls ; as, *Peter, come hither*. *Peter* is in the Vocative Case, because I call him.

The Ablative takes away from ; as, *I took it from John*. *From John* is in the Ablative Case, because the thing is taken from him.

Observe,

Observe, that in the *Spanish* tongue the Nominative is not distinguished from the Accusative, nor the Genitive from the Ablative, unless it be by the sense; because the Article of the Nominative Case is like that of the Accusative, and the article of the Genitive does not differ from that of the Ablative, as you may see in the Declension of Nouns.

All Nouns are either Masculine or Feminine; the Masculine takes the article *el*, and the Feminine the article *la*; the Neuter takes the article *lo*.

A Pronoun is a word which is used in the place of a Noun Substantive; as, for example, *give me, give him, give us.* *Me, him, us,* are in the place of a proper Noun Substantive, viz. *John, Paul, Peter.*

Pronouns are of six sorts, Positives, Demonstratives, Personals, Interrogatives, Relatives, and Indefinites; as you may see in the Declension of Pronouns.

A Verb is a word that shews either a being, or an action, or a passion; as for example, *to be, good, to beat, to be beaten.* *To be good* shews a being; *to beat* shews an action; and *to be beaten* a passion.

If the action remains in its subject, then the Verb is neuter, or reciprocal; as, *I sleep, duermo; I rejoice, me alegro.*

A Verb has five Moods, viz. Indicative, Imperative, Optative, Subjunctive, and Infinitive; and six Tenses, which may be reduced to three, viz. Present, Past, and Future.

The Indicative shews either the thing or person; as, *The sun shines, el sol luce; I speak, yo hablo.*

The Imperative bids; as, *Speak to me, habla me, or habla a mi; Come hither, ven acá.*

The Optative wishes; as, *God grant that I may speak to the King, quiera Dios que hable al Rey.*

The Subjunctive is so called, because it is placed under a conjunction; as, *When I have received my money, I will pay you, quando haya recibido mi dinero, pagaré a vm.*

And the Infinitive determines no circumstance of time; as, *To speak, hablar; to love, amar.*

The Tenses are, the Present Tense, the Imperfect, the Preterperfect Definite, the Preterperfect Indefinite, the Preterpluperfect, and the Future.

The Present shews, that either a person or thing is present; as, My master teaches, *mi maestro enseña*; The spring brings forth flowers, *la primavera produce flores*.

The Imperfect shews that the action is interrupted; as, I did dance when my father entered into my chamber, *bañaba quando mi padre entró en mi aposento*.

The Preterperfect Definite shews, that either the action is past above a day, or that it is determined by some circumstance of time; as, The great Frederic conquered all Saxony, *el gran Frederico conquistó toda la Saxonia*; I spoke yesterday to the King, *hablé ayer con el Rey*.

The Preterperfect Indefinite shews that the action is past, without signifying any circumstance of time; as, I have spoken to the King, *he hablado al Rey*: But if it marks any circumstance of time, either it is of the same day, or a Pronoun Demonstrative goes before it; as, I have spoken to-day to the King, *he hablado oy al Rey*; I have suffered much this year, *he padecido mucho este año*.

The Preterpluperfect Tense is so called, because the action, being entirely past, cannot be interrupted; as, I had danced when my father entered into my chamber, *habia bailado quando mi padre entró en mi aposento*.

The Future Tense shews the Time to come; as I will rise to-morrow, *me levantaré mañana*.

All Verbs are conjugated; that is, they have several terminations; as, I love, thou lovest, &c. we shall love, *yo amo, tu amas, nos amaremos*.

There are three Persons in the Singular, and three in the Plural, viz. I, thou, he; we, you, they; *yo, tu, él; nos, vos, ellos*.

The Singular denotes one thing, or one person, and the Plural more than one; as, *a man*; there is the Singular: *Two men, or more*; there is the Plural.

The Participle is so called, because it is derived from a Verb ; as, loving, *amante*, is derived from the Verb, to love, *amár*.

There is one Active, which is always ending in *ante*, or *ente*, in *Spanish*, and in *ing* in *English* ; as, *amante*, loving ; *dormiente*, sleeping.

And another Passive, which is ended in *ado* in the Verbs of the first Conjugation, and in *ido* in those of the second and third : as you may see in the Conjugations of Verbs.

There are four Auxiliary Verbs in *Spanish*, To have, *tenér*, or *havér* ; and to be, *sér*, *estár*. They are so called, because they help to conjugate all other Verbs, as you may see in the Conjugation of Verbs.

An Adverb is a word which is joined to a Verb, and either increases or diminishes its action or passion ; as, I love virtue *greatly* ; I am *little* loved of you. *Greatly* increases the passion of love towards virtue, and *little* diminishes your love towards me.

A Conjunction is a word which joins sentences and words together ; as, I have seen your father *and* mother, *hé visto su padre y su madre de vm.*

A Preposition is a word which is put before a Noun or Pronoun ; as, *Under* the bed, *debáxo de la cama* ; *In* your chamber, *en su aposento* ; *With* me, *con migo*.

An Interjection is a word which discovers some sudden emotion of the mind ; as, *Alas!* unhappy that I am, *ay! desdichado de mi* ; *Ha!* how cruel you are, *ay! que vm es cruel.*

An Article is a Particle, or a little word which serves to shew of what gender, of what number, and in what case is a Noun ; they are fifteen in all, viz. *el, la, lo, del, de la, de lo, al, à la, à lo, los, las, de los, de las, à los, à las* ; as you may see in the Declension of Nouns.

C H A P II.

Of Letters, and their Pronunciation.

TH E letters of the *Spanish* language are twenty-eight, viz.

A, B, C, CH, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, K, L, LL, M, N, Ñ, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U, V, X, Y, Z.

They are pronounced thus :

a, be, ce, che, de, 'e, ese, ge, ache, i, jota or ijota, ka, ele, elle, eme, ene, eñe, o, pe, qu or cu, ere, esse, te, u vocál, v consonante, equis, y griéga, zedo or zeta.

The reason why the *Spanish* tongue is so hard to be pronounced by *Englishmen*, is, because the *English* pronounce their Vowels otherwise than the *Spaniards*.

He then that will pronounce well the *Spanish* tongue, ought to pronounce well these Vowels,

A, E, I, O, U.

* *aw, a, ee, o, oo.*

As for the Consonants, there is not so much difficulty; they are pronounced in the *Spanish* tongue as in the *English*, except *ll, G, H, X, Z, J*, and *ç* and *ñ*, which are peculiar to the *Spanish* language.

Of Vowels.

A is pronounced as above; and as the *English* pronounce it in these words, *law, all, call, fall*; as *Madama, ama, llama*.

E is always pronounced as the *English* pronounce it in these words, *benefit, relation*.

I is pronounced as the *English* pronounce their double *ee*, in these words, *steel, sleep, steep*.

* These *Italic* letters denote the similar sounds in *English* of the Vowels in *Spanish*.

O is pronounced as they pronounce it in these words, *more, stone, store*; as, *oigo, olivo*.

U is pronounced as they pronounce *oo* in these words, *good, cook, cool*.

Y is pronounced as two *ee*; as, *ayudár*, to help; *ayúno*, fast.

* * When two Vowels meet together in *Spanish* words, they must be pronounced distinctly, as *amainar, caer, acaecer, &c.* When there are two *ee* in a word, both are also plainly and distinctly pronounced; as *creér*, to believe; *leér*, to read, &c.

Of Consonants.

B. This letter is pronounced as in other languages, closing the lips, as in the *English* word *boy*.

C, before the letters *e, i*, is pronounced like an *s*; as, *cédro*, a cedar-tree; *ciervo*, a stag; *cien, ciento*, an hundred. When before *a, o, u*, it is pronounced as *k*; as, *caballo*, horse; *cofre*, trunk; *culébra*, snake; *culantro*, coriander.

When *b* follows the letter *c*; it is pronounced as in the *English*, much, *mucho*; child, *niño ó niña*.

Upon the *ç*, formed with a small dash under it, I am of opinion, with the Royal and learned Academy of Madrid, that it is superfluous in our language; and as such its use must be avoided, placing the *z* in its stead in every word where *ç* used to be. But as *ç* is found in old *Spanish* authors, I think it proper to acquaint the curious, that its pronunciation is near the same as that of *c*, when before *e, i*, because *ç* was invented to supply the combination in the Vowels, *a, o, u*. Z is pronounced almost as the *English* pronounce the double *ff*.

D has the same sound in *Spanish* as in the other languages, without exception.

F is pronounced always as in *English*; but it must be observed, that the Spaniards never use two *ff* in their writings.

G is only guttural before the Vowels *e, i, y*, as in *género*, sort; *gigante*, giant; but *g* before the

Vowels *a, o, u*, is not aspirated, and is pronounced as in *English*; as, *gallo*, a cock; *gobierno*, government. When *g* comes before *n*, then it is pronounced as in *ignorar*, to be ignorant of; *ignoto*, unknown; *magnánimo*, magnanimous.

H is generally so lightly aspirated, that in many words it can scarce be perceived; as in *hablar*, to speak; *barriero*, carrier. *H* after *c* is pronounced as in *English*; cheese, *queso*; much, *mucho*, &c.

K. The *Spaniards* make use of this letter only in conformity to the etymology of the words derived from other languages, and is pronounced as in *English*.

L and *ll*. The single *l* is pronounced in *Spanish* as in *English*; but the double *ll* is pronounced as in *Italian*, *gl*, or *ll* in *French*, which sounds as if an *i* was after the first *l*; as in *llevar*, *llorar*, *vasallo*; read *lievar*, *liorar*, *vasalio*. *L* is never doubled in the end of words.

M, N, Ñ. *M* and *n* are pronounced as in *English*; but this *ñ*, called *con tilde*, or *eñe*, is pronounced as if it had an *i* after the *n*; as in *Señor*, Sir; *maña*, dexterity; read *Senior*, *mania*. But the proper sound and pronunciation of this letter wants a master, and cannot be explained so well by writing as by hearing.

P, Q, R, are pronounced as in other languages, and as in *English*.

S, T, Z. *S* and *z* are always pronounced in *Spanish* strongly, and as two *ss* in *English*. *T* has the same pronunciation as in *English*.

X is aspirated as the *jota*, *j*, in the beginning of the words; as in *xarave*, juice, &c. But when the *x* is followed by a Consonant in the middle of the words, then it must be pronounced like an *f*; as, *excitar*, to excite; *excomulgár*, to excommunicate; *exheredar*, to disinherit, &c.

When you have read all these rules, take every Consonant one after another, and join them with every Vowel, thus :

Ba, be, bi, bo, bu.
 Ca, ce, ci, co, cu.
 Cha, che, chi, cho, chu.
 Da, de, di, do, du.
 Fa, fe, fi, fo, fu.
 Ga, ge, gi, go, gu.
 Gua, gue, gui.
 Ha, he, hi, ho, hu.
 Ja, je, ji, jo, ju.
 La, le, li, lo, lu.
 Lla, lle, lli, llo, llu.
 Ma, me, mi, mo, mu.
 Na, ne, ni, no, nu.
 Ña, ñe, ñi, ño, ñu.
 Pa, pe, pi, po, pu.
 Qua, que, qui.
 Ra, re, ri, ro, ru.
 Sa, se, si, so, su.
 Ta, te, ti, to, tu.
 Va, ve, vi, vo, vu.
 Xa, xe, xi, xo, xu.
 Za, ze, zi, zo, zu.

Observe, that though you have good and clear rules to read well the Spanish tongue, yet no man will ever be able to obtain by himself its true and perfect pronunciation, because the true pronunciation of a language depends more upon the ear than upon rule ; therefore, I advise to take a good master for some months.

Of Accents.

The *Spanish* have two accents, the *Grave* (`) and the *Acute* (´). The *Grave* descends obliquely from the left to the right, and is used in the *Spanish* tongue on the Vowels *à, è, ì, ò, ù*, when they make a sense by themselves, and upon the syllable before a short one. The accent called *Acute* descends from the right to the left, and serves to prolong the pronunciation ; as
montañés,

montañés, highlander; *bayló*, he danced; *baylará*, he will dance: and to denote the quantity of the syllable; as, *cántaro*, pitcher; *cantára*, I would sing; *centerá*, he will sing; *libro*, a book; *libró*, he discharged or gave a bill.

Of Points.

Because a language is better understood when it is well pointed; therefore we ought not to neglect it in writing.

There are eight sorts of points, the *Comma* (,) which makes distinction between sentences and propositions; the *Colon* (:), which denotes the end of a phrase, its period being not quite finished; the *Semicolon* (;), which does not much differ from the *Colon*; the *Point final* (.), which ends a Period, as you may see in this example:

When I saw you, I was very glad; but my joy ended, as soon as I heard of the death of your father.

The *Point of Interrogation* (?), which is placed after a question; as, *From whence do you come?* And the *Point of Admiration* (!), which shews an astonishment; as, *Good God! is it possible! Alas! &c.*

A *Parentthesis*, thus (), serves to separate a clause, without which the speech may have a perfect sense, to the end that it may be more plain; as, *vi a mi amigo (esto se quede secreto) quien era triste*; I saw my friend (that must be secret) who was dull.

Dieresis (¨) is a *Greek* word, called by the Printers *crema*, and signifies a severing or division, and serves to separate two Vowels, which might be joined in one syllable, and to note that both are to be pronounced plainly, and with distinction; and this mark is to be put on the *ü*; as, *eloqüente*, eloquent; *frequente*, frequent; and this only in the words where *u* is pronounced openly.

Of the Capital Letters.

Capital Letters are always used in the beginning of any writing, paragraph, period, or speech; after a
final

final point; in all the proper names of persons, provinces, kingdoms, districts, cities, towns, villages, mountains, rivers, fountains, &c. and in all titles of honour, dignity, and authority; as *King, Prince, &c.*

Of Etymology.

The best of those authors who have treated on Etymology in a regular order and method, was St. *Isidore of Seville*, whose rules have been adopted by the Royal Academy of *Madrid*; and I followed them too in the *New English and Spanish*, and *Spanish and English Dictionary*, which I have lately printed, and to which I refer the reader*.

Of Numbers.

In *Spanish*, as in other languages, there are two Numbers; viz.

Singular, speaking of one thing, or one person.

Plural, speaking of more than one.

When the Noun ends with one of the Vowels, *a, e, i, o, u*, the Plural is formed by adding only an *s* to it; as, *casa*, house; *casas*, houses; *hombre*, man; *hombres*, men; *albelí*, gilliflower; *albelis*, gilliflowers; *caballo*, horse; *caballos*, horses; *espíritu*, spirit; *espíritus*, spirits. But when the Noun ends with a *y*, or a Consonant, then the Plural is made by adding *es* to the Singular; as from *ley*, law; *leyes*, laws; *verdad*, truth; *verdades*, truths, &c.

* A new edition of this Dictionary, with considerable Improvements has since been published by Mr. Baretti.

CHAP. III.

Of the Declension of ARTICLES and NOUNS.

Of the Spanish ARTICLES.

THERE are three Articles in the *Spanish* language, as in the *Latin*, viz. the Article Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter. The Article Masculine is *el*, and is made use of before Nouns of the Masculine

Masculine Gender; the Article Feminine is *la*, and is put before Nouns of the Feminine Gender; the Neutral Article is *lo*, and is usually placed before Nouns Substantives formed from Adjectives; for there are no Neuter Nouns in *Spanish*, they being all either of the Masculine or Feminine Gender.

Declension of the Masculine Article.

Singular Number.	Plural Number.
<i>Nom.</i> <i>el</i> , the	<i>Nom.</i> <i>los</i> , the
<i>Gen.</i> <i>del</i> , or <i>de el</i> , of the	<i>Gen.</i> <i>de los</i> , of the
<i>Dat.</i> <i>à el</i> , or <i>al</i> , to the	<i>Dat.</i> <i>à los</i> , to the
<i>Acc.</i> <i>el</i> , the	<i>Acc.</i> <i>los</i> , the
<i>Abl.</i> <i>del</i> , or <i>de el</i> , from the.	<i>Abl.</i> <i>de los</i> , from the.

Feminine Article.

Singular Number.	Plural Number.
<i>Nom.</i> <i>la</i> , the	<i>Nom.</i> <i>las</i> , the
<i>Gen.</i> <i>de la</i> , of the	<i>Gen.</i> <i>de las</i> , of the
<i>Dat.</i> <i>à la</i> , to the	<i>Dat.</i> <i>à las</i> , to the
<i>Acc.</i> <i>la</i> , the	<i>Acc.</i> <i>las</i> , the
<i>Abl.</i> <i>de la</i> , from the.	<i>Abl.</i> <i>de las</i> , from the.

Neuter Article.

<i>Nominative</i> , <i>lo</i> , the
<i>Genitive</i> , <i>de lo</i> , of the
<i>Dative</i> , <i>à lo</i> , to the
<i>Accusative</i> , <i>lo</i> , the
<i>Ablative</i> , <i>de lo</i> , from the

EXAMPLES:

A Noun Masculine declined with the Articles.

Singular Number.	Plural Number.
<i>N.</i> <i>el Rey</i> , the King.	<i>Los Reyes</i> , the Kings.
<i>G.</i> <i>del</i> , or <i>de el Rey</i> , of the King.	<i>De los Reyes</i> , of the Kings.
<i>D.</i> <i>à el</i> , or <i>al Rey</i> , to the King.	<i>à los Reyes</i> , to the Kings.
<i>Ac.</i> <i>el Rey</i> , the King.	<i>Los Reyes</i> , the Kings.
<i>A.</i> <i>del</i> , or <i>de el Rey</i> , from the	<i>De los Reyes</i> , from the Kings.
[King.	

A Noun

A Noun Feminine with the Articles.

Singular Number.	Plural Number.
<i>N</i> la Reyna, <i>the Queen.</i>	Las Reynas, <i>the Queens.</i>
<i>G.</i> de la Reyna, <i>of the Queen.</i>	De las Reynas, <i>of the Queens.</i>
<i>D.</i> à la Reyna, <i>to the Queen.</i>	à las Reynas, <i>to the Queens.</i>
<i>Ac.</i> la Reyna, <i>the Queen.</i>	Las Reynas, <i>the Queens.</i>
<i>A.</i> de la Reyna, <i>from the Queen.</i>	De las Reynas, <i>from the Queens.</i>

Thus are declined all the other Nouns Masculine and Feminine with the Article. The Proper Nouns of men are never declined with the said Articles.

Example of Adjectives made Substantives with the Article Neuter, lo.

<i>Nominative,</i>	lo hermoso, <i>that which is handsome.</i>
<i>Genitive,</i>	de lo hermoso, <i>of that which is handsome.</i>
<i>Dative,</i>	à lo hermoso, <i>to that which is handsome.</i>
<i>Accusative,</i>	lo hermoso, <i>that which is handsome.</i>
<i>Ablative,</i>	de lo hermoso, <i>from that which is handsome.</i>

All the Adjectives may be used in this manner as Substantives, in the *Spanish* language, adding the Article *lo* before the Masculine Gender.

Observe, That the Vocative has no Article, and it is designed so, *ô hombre*, O man; *ô Pedro*, O Peter.

Of PRONOUNS.

Pronouns are words used instead of names or nouns, to avoid the repetition of them.

There are six sorts of Pronouns, *viz.* Personals, Possessives, Demonstratives, Relatives, Interrogatives, and Indefinites.

Of Pronouns Personal.

These are called Personals or Primitives, because they express the person or thing before named. There are three Pronouns Personal; *yo*, I; *tu*, thou; *el*, he; or *ella*, she.

The

The first is declined thus :

Singular.	Nom. yo, I	Plural.	Nom. nos, or nosotros, we
	Gen. de mi, of me		Gen. de nos, of us
	Dat. à mi, to me		Dat. à nos, to us
	Acc. me, me		Acc. nos, us
	Abl. de mi, from me.		Abl. de nos, from us.

The second Personal declined :

Singular.	Nom. tu, thou	Plural.	Nom. vos, or vosotros, ye
	Gen. de ti, of thee		Gen. de vos, of ye
	Dat. à ti, to thee		Dat. à vos, to ye
	Acc. te, thee		Acc. vos, ye
	Abl. de ti, from thee.		Abl. de vos, from ye.

The third Personal :

Sing. Mas.	Nom. el, he	Pl. Mascul.	Nom. ellos, they
	Gen. de el, of him		Gen. de ellos, of them
	Dat. à el, to him		Dat. à ellos, to them
	Acc. le, or lo, him		Acc. les, or los, them
	Abl. de el, from him.		Abl. de ellos, from them.
Sing. Fem.	Nom. ella, she	Plur. Fem.	Nom. ellas, they
	Gen. de ella, of her		Gen. de ellas, of them
	Dat. à ella, to her		Dat. à ellas, to them
	Acc. la, her		Acc. las, them
	Abl. de ella, from her.		Abl. de ellas, from them.

The Personal Reciprocal, common to both Genders, is declined thus :

Gen. de si mismo, or si misma, of himself, or of herself.
 Dat. à si mismo, or à si misma, to himself, or to herself.
 Acc. se, himself, or herself.
 Abl. de si mismo, or de si misma, from himself, or from herself.

Observe, that *nosotros* and *vosotros* make *nosotras* and *vosotras* in the Feminine Gender.

Of Pronouns Possessive.

They are so called, because they are derived from those above-mentioned, and denote possession. There are three of these Pronouns answering to the three persons, viz. *mio*, mine; *tuyo*, thine; *suyo*, his; *nuestro*, our; *vuestro*, your; *su*, their; with their Feminine Gender,

Gender, *mia, tuya, suya, nuestra, vuestra, su*. It must be observed that these Pronouns, *mio, tuyo, suyo*, are never placed before Substantives; and so it cannot be said, *mio libro*, but *mi libro*, my book; *tu libro*, thy book; *su libro*, his book. Thus may you see, that *mi, tu, su*, are always used before Substantives of both Genders, for the Singular; and *mis, tus, sus*, for the Plural. *Mio, tuyo, suyo*, is only made use of in questioning, answering, affirming, or denying; as will be explained by examples and rules in the Syntax.

Of Pronouns Demonstrative.

There are three principal Demonstratives; the first is *este*, this; the second, *esse*, that; and the third, *aquel*, that. But observe, that *este* shews the thing or person that is just near or by us; and *esse* shews the thing that is a little farther, or near the person; and *aquel* shews what is very distant from the person who speaks, or is spoken to.

These Pronouns are declined thus:

	<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	
Singular.	<i>Nom.</i> este	esta	esto	<i>This</i>
	<i>Gen.</i> de este	de esta	de esto	<i>Of this</i>
	<i>Dat.</i> à este	à esta	à esto	<i>To this</i>
	<i>Acc.</i> este	esta	esto	<i>This</i>
	<i>Abl.</i> de este	de esta	de esto	<i>From this.</i>

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>(No Neut.)</i>	
Plural.	<i>Nom.</i> estos	estas		<i>These</i>
	<i>Gen.</i> de estos	de estas		<i>Of these</i>
	<i>Dat.</i> à estos	à estas		<i>To these</i>
	<i>Acc.</i> estos	estas		<i>These</i>
	<i>Abl.</i> de estos	de estas		<i>From these.</i>

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	
Singular.	<i>Nom.</i> esse	essa	esso	<i>That</i>
	<i>Gen.</i> de esse	de essa	de esso	<i>Of that</i>
	<i>Dat.</i> à esse	à essa	à esso	<i>To that</i>
	<i>Acc.</i> esse	essa	esso	<i>That</i>
	<i>Abl.</i> de esse	de essa	de esso	<i>From that.</i>

Nem.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>(No Neut.)</i>
Plural.	<i>Nom.</i> ellos	ellas	<i>Those</i>
	<i>Gen.</i> de ellos	de ellas	<i>Of those</i>
	<i>Dat.</i> à ellos	à ellas	<i>To those</i>
	<i>Acc.</i> ellos	ellas	<i>Those</i>
	<i>Abl.</i> de ellos	de ellas	<i>From those.</i>

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	
Singular.	<i>Nom.</i> aquel	aquella	aquello	<i>That</i>
	<i>Gen.</i> de aquel	de aquella	de aquello	<i>Of that</i>
	<i>Dat.</i> à aquel	à aquella	à aquello	<i>To that</i>
	<i>Acc.</i> aquel	aquella	aqueilo	<i>That</i>
	<i>Abl.</i> de aquel	de aquella	de aquello	<i>From that.</i>

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	
Plural.	<i>Nom.</i> aquellos	aquellas	<i>Those</i>
	<i>Gen.</i> de aquellos	de aquellas	<i>Of those</i>
	<i>Dat.</i> à aquellos	à aquellas	<i>To those</i>
	<i>Acc.</i> aquellos	aquellas	<i>Those</i>
	<i>Abl.</i> de aquellos	de aquellas	<i>From those.</i>

Observe, that from the Pronouns *este*, *esse*, are formed *aqueste*, *aquesta*, *aquesto*, and *aquesse*, *aquessa*, *aquesso*. They are made use of only by poets, instead of *este* or *esse*, and signify the same; but in prose they are too low and obsolete.

The words *otro*, *otra*, are often joined to *este* and *esse*, taking off the last *e*; as, *estotro*, *estotra*, *essotro*, *essotra*. Example: *Estotro hombre*, this other man; *estotra muger*, this other woman; *essotro hombre*, that other man; *essotra muger*, that other woman.

There are two other Pronouns, which have only a Plural Number, as signifying two, which are *ambos* and *entrambos*, both. To the first of them is often added *a dos*, that is, *ambos à dos*, both together; and *entrambos* imports much the same.

Pronouns Relative and Interrogative.

Que is interrogative; and signifies *what*; it has no Plural; it is common to both Genders.

Quien, who, is also interrogative, making *quienes* in the Plural: it is likewise common to both Genders.

Qual signifies *which*; as, *qual de ellos?* which of them? It makes *quales* in the Plural, being common to both Genders.

The Pronoun *cuyo*, *cuya*, whose, is either interrogative or relative, making *cuyos*, *cuyas*; in the Plural; as *Pedro, cuyo libro tengo*, &c. Peter, whose book I have; or *cuya es esta pluma*; whose pen is this?

Observe, that the said four Pronouns, *que*, *quien*, *cuyo*, and *qual*, are also relatives; as, *el hombre que he visto*, the man whom I have seen; *el sujeto quien lo dice*, the person who says it; *el Rey cuyo palacio es hermoso*; the King whose palace is handsome. When *qual* is relative, then *el*, *la*, and *lo*, are joined to it, as signifying *who*; but *lo qual* is expressed by *the which*. These two joined together are declined as follows:

Sing. Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Nom. el qual	la qual	lo qual	Which or who
Gen. de el qual	de la qual	de lo qual	Of which
Dat. á el qual	á la qual	à lo qual	To which
Acc. el qual	la qual	lo qual	Which
Abl. de el qual	de la qual	de lo qual	From which.
Plur. Masc.	Fem.	(No Plur.)	
Nom. los quales	las quales		Which
Gen. de los quales	de las quales		Of which
Dat. à los quales	à las quales		To which
Acc. los quales	las quales		Which
Abl. de los quales	de las quales		From which.

Observe, that when the word *quiera* is added to *quien*, or *qual*, it quite alters the meaning; *quienquiera* signifying whoever, or any person; and *qualquiera* any one, whether man, or woman, or thing.

Of Pronouns Indefinite.

The Imperfect or Indefinite Pronouns are these: *alguno*, *alguna*, some; *ninguno*, *ninguna*, none; *algo*, something; *cada uno*, every one; *cada*, each; *nadie*, nobody; *otro*, *otra*, another; *tal*, such; *tanto*, so much; *quanto*, how much; *mucho*, *mucha*, much, or many; *fulano*, or *zutano*, such one; *todo*, *toda*, all.

Observe, that *cada*, *algo*, *nadie*, *fulano*, and *zutano*, have no Plural; but the others make their Plural by adding an *s*, or *es* to the singular.

CHAP. IV.

Of V E R B S.

A VERB is a part of speech that signifies to be, to do, or to suffer; as, *ser hombre*, to be a man; *amo*, I love; *soi amado*, I am loved. It is conjugated through Moods and Tenses. By Moods, the Verb is changed according to the circumstances; as, *yo hablo*, I speak, is the Indicative; *habla tu*, speak thou, the Imperative, &c. Tenses are the distinction and variation of times; as, *venia*, I was coming; *vine*, I came, &c.

Verbs are divided into Personals (so called because they have Persons), as *yo amo*, I love; *tu amas*, thou lovest, &c. and Impersonals (because without persons) as, *conviene*, it is convenient; *consta*, it is plain.

The Personals are divided into

Active,		Neuter,
Passive,		Reciprocal.

Active signifies to do; as, *enseñar*, to teach; *leer*, to read; and may be made passive by the auxiliary Verb *ser*, and the Participle Passive of the Verb; as, *ser enseñado*, *soi enseñado*, &c.

Passive signifies to suffer; as, *soi amado*. But note, that in the third person Singular, and the Third of the Plural, they are conjugated not only with the Auxiliary *ser*, but even with the Particle *se*; as, *Dios es amado*, or *Dios se ama*, God is beloved; *bueno es que la virtud sea hallado*, or *se halle en un Príncipe*, it is good that virtue be found in a Prince; *que los buenos sean amados*, or *se amen*, that the virtuous may be loved. By which you may see, that the Participle Passive is varied in the Conjugation of this Verb, saying, *yo soy amado*, *nosotros somos amados*.

Neuter

Neuter, properly, is that which signifies neither action nor passion; as, *colorár*, to colour; *coloreár*, to recover a colour, or to give colour; *corrér*, to run; *assentír*, to assent. This Verb makes a perfect sense by itself, in which it differs from the Active; as, *duermo*, I sleep; *nieva*, it snows.

The Verb Active says the same thing in the Active and Passive Voices; as, *yo amo a Dios*, or *Dios es amado de mí*, which cannot be said by the Neuter in a like manner.

The Neuter is either Substantive, as, *ser* to be, or absolute (so called for its making a sense by itself) by action, as *blasphemár*, to blaspheme; *llueve*, it rains; or by passion, as *colcreár*, *ennegrecér*.

The Verb Reciprocal is that which returns the sense backward, and is conjugated thus; *apercibirse*, to be prepared or provided for: *me apercibo*, I prepare myself; *te apercibes*, thou preparest thyself; and always has the Particle *se* in the Infinitive.

Note, That in the *Spanish* language one Verb may be made *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, and *reciprocal*, by the different senses that may be applied to it; as *acostar*, to put one in his bed, is active, and is made passive by the Verb Auxiliary *estár*, and the Participle Passive; as, *estoy acostado*, I am put in my bed, or I lie down. When it signifies to follow one's party or opinion, or to declare partially for a Prince, it is *neuter*; as, *Pedro dexádo el servicio de Fráncia, acostó a la parte de España*, Peter having left the *French* service, enlisted himself in the *Spanish* service; and when it signifies to come near to a place, as, *acostar se aquí*, to come near to this place, then it is *reciprocal*; as, *si te acuestas aquí, te mataré*, if you come near to this place, I will kill you.

Some of the Verbs are regular (so called for their being confined to rules), and others irregular (so called because they have no rule); but as their irregularity is various, sometimes in the Present Tense of the Indicative; in the Preterperfect, Future, in the Imperative; Preterimperfects, and Future of the

Optative, and otherwise in their Participles ; I shall take care to mention it in the Conjugations.

Of Conjugations.

There are three Conjugations in the *Spanish* tongue, viz.

- | | | | |
|-------------------|-------|---|-------------------------------|
| 1. in <i>ár</i> , | } as, | { | <i>amár</i> , to love. |
| 2. in <i>ér</i> , | | | <i>respondér</i> , to answer. |
| 3. in <i>ír</i> , | | | <i>subír</i> , to go up. |

So that the *Spanish* Verbs are to be looked for in the Dictionaries by their Infinitives.

Of Moods.

The Moods are fix, as in *Latin*, viz. the *Indicative*, or that which shows or declares ; the *Imperative*, or that which commands ; *Optative*, or that which wishes, or desires ; *Subjunctive*, which supposes something ; *Potential*, or that by which something is expected ; and the *Infinitive*, which leaves all undetermined.

Of Tenses.

The Tenses, which are the Times of action or passion, are three properly, viz. the Present, the Past, and the Time to come ; and with those made by circumlocution, are ten in the Indicative Mood, viz. the Present, Preterimperfect, three Preterperfects, the Pluperfect, and four Futures ; and in the Optative Mood there are nine, viz. the Present, three Preterimperfects, a Preterperfect, two Preterpluperfects, and two Futures.

Of the Indicative Mood.

The Present Tense of all Conjugations of Regular Verbs is formed by changing *ár*, *ér*, or *ír*, of the Infinitive into *o* ; as from *amár*, say *ámo* ; from *leér*, *leo* ; from *cumplír*, *cúmplo*. This Tense extends itself to a future time ; as, *mañana es día de fiesta*, to-morrow is a holiday.

The Preterimperfect of the first Conjugation is formed by changing *ár* into *ába* ; as from *amár*, *amába*,
I did

I did love, or I was loving; and in the second and third Conjugation it is formed by changing *ér* and *ír* into *ía*; as from *perdér*, *perdía*; from *pedír*, *pedía*.

The first Preterperfect of the first Conjugation is made by changing *ár* into *é*; as, *amár*, *amé*; but of the second and third Conjugations by changing *ér* and *ír* into *í*, as *perdér*, *perdí*, *pedír*, *pedí*. This Tense is called *Definite*, because it is a time perfectly past and expressed as such; as, *el mês pasado hablé con él*, I spoke with him last month.

The second Perfect of all the Conjugations is formed of the Auxiliary Verb *haber*, and the Participle Passive of the Verb treated of; as, *he hablado*, I have spoken; *he perdido*, I have lost; *he pedido*, I have asked.

The third Perfect is formed in the same manner, as, *hubo hablado*, &c. but not so frequently used in *Spanish* as the other two.

Note, That these two latter are called Preterperfects Indefinite, for their time is not determined; as, *le he hablado*, I have spoken to him; but we do not say when. So that the difference between the first Preterperfect and the others is, that the former should express time, and the latter not; besides that the first extends itself farther than the others (which are referred to time but lately past). You may say, *le hablé dos años ha*, I spoke to him two years ago; but you cannot say, *le he hablado dos años ha*, I have spoken to him two years ago; because *he hablado* does only extend to a time so lately past, that it appears to have something of the present. These are *Valera's* observations, which I advise the reader to observe, in order to avoid the frequent equivocations that happen in speaking and writing.

The Preterpluperfect thus: *había hablado*, *había perdido*, *había pedido*, I had spoken, lost, &c.

The first Future is formed of the Infinitive, adding *é* after the *r* of the present Infinitive; as of *hablar*, adding *é*, say *hablaré*; from *perdér*, *perderé*; from

pedir, pediré; putting always the accent on the last letter.

The second Future with the Auxiliary *hé, tengo*, or *debo*, and the Infinitive Mood with *de* before it; as, *hé or tengo de dár*, I am to give; *debo de dár*, or *debo dár*, I am obliged, I must give.

The third thus: *habré de hablar*, I shall be obliged to speak, &c.

The fourth (which properly is the second Preter-pluperfect) thus: *había de hablar*, I had, or I was to speak; *habías de hablar*, &c.

Of the Imperative.

The Imperative is made of the third person of the present Indicative Mood, and of the present Optative; as, *ama tu*, love thou: *áme el*, let him love; *pierde tu*, lose thou; *pierda el*, let him lose, &c.

So that the third person of the Indicative is the second of the Imperative, and the third of the Imperative is the first of the Optative; the second Plural is formed from the Infinitive, by changing *r* into *d*; as of *amár*, say *amád*, love ye; *perdér*, *perded*; *pedir*, *pedid*.

Of the Optative, Potential, and Subjunctive Moods.

The Optative, or that which wishes or desires, has always an Adverb annexed to it; as, *óxala, ó si pluguiesse à Dios*, would to God, I pray God, or God grant; *aunque, no obstante que, sin embargo que*, although, notwithstanding.

The Potential properly has no signs in Spanish, but in English it has these, *can, may, might, could, should, or ought*, which are equal to these Spanish expressions, *puede ser que, es menester que*, as some authors will have it.

The Subjunctive has always some Conjunction annexed to it; as, *si, como, que, quando*, if, as, that, when; as *como yo áme*, as I may love; but the Tenses are all alike in these three Moods.

The

The Present of the Optative is formed from the Present of the Indicative, by changing *o* into *e* in the first Conjugation, and into *a* in the second and third Conjugations; as from *amo*, say *ame*, from *pierdo*, *pierda*, *pido*, *pida*.

The first and second Preterimperfects are formed from the first person of the Preterperfect of the Indicative; as from *amé* in the first Conjugation, changing *é* into *ára*, or *ásse*, is made *amára*, *amásse*. In the second and third Conjugations, add to the Preterperfect *éra* or *ésse*; as from *perdí*, *perdiéra*, *perdiésse*; from *subí*, say *subiéra*, *subiésse*.

The third Preterimperfect is formed from the Infinitive, adding *ía*; as from *amar*, say *amaría*; from *leer*, *leería*; from *subir*, *subiría*.

Observe here, that these Tenses have two ways to explain the second person plural; as, *amaradeis*, or *amaraís*, *amassedeis*, or *amasseís*, *amariadeis*, or *amariaís*; and so in the other two Conjugations.

Observe likewise, that these three Tenses differ from one another, rightly speaking; though there is such a confusion in explaining them, that there is hardly any difference made by the Spaniards. Some authors adapt them to the three Moods, viz. *amára* to the Optative, *amasse* to the Subjunctive, and *amaría* to the Potential; as, *óxala yo amára la virtud*, God grant that I might love virtue; *como yo amasse a Dios, el me amaría*, as I should love God, so would he love me.

Other authors, as Tominque, Cessér in Gram. Rud. and Villalba, are of opinion, that *amára* denotes the disposition of a thing, or the readiness for an action; *amasse*, the beginning of it; and *amaría* the possibility to obtain it; or, as Terebio says, the first Imperfect is a Tense of motion *ex quo*, from whence, and relates to the medium; as, *de los veinte pessos le diera diez para comprarse un vestido*, of the twenty pieces of eight, I would give him ten, that he might buy himself a suit of cloaths: the second a Tense Medium, or *in quo*; as, *como le hallasse haciendo lo que dixes*, as I should find him in doing what I told him; and the third

a conditional Tense ; as, *lo haría, como el fuéa bueno*, I would do it, if he would be good.

One thing is certain amidst all these, that *aunque, como, oxala, &c.* follow the two first Preterimperfects, and the third Imperfect Tense is used by way of interrogation or suspension, saying, *haría v. m. esto*, would you do this ? *O que bien lo haría yo !* O that I could do it well ! or with *si*.

The Preterperfect is formed from the Auxiliary Verb *haber*, and the Participle Passive thus ; *haya amado, haya perdido, haya pedido*, when I have loved, &c.

The first Pluperfect thus : *hubiera amado*, when I had loved.

The second, *hubiese amado*, when I had loved.

The first Future is made of the first Preterimperfect by changing *a* into *e* ; as, *amára, amáre ; perdiéra, perdiére ; pidiéra, pidiére* ; with the same accent on all the syllables.

The second Future of the first Imperfect, by changing *ra* into *re*, and the Participle Passive ; as from *hubiera amado*, say in the Future, *hubiere amado*. So that there are nine Tenses in the Optative Mood, as well as in the Subjunctive and Potential.

Of the Infinitive Mood.

The Infinitive signifies to do, to suffer, or to be, and this Mood has neither Number, Person, nor Nominative Case, before it ; as, *amár*, to love ; *perder*, to lose ; *pedir*, to ask.

When two Verbs come together without any Nominative Case between them, then the latter will be in the Infinitive Mood ; as, *deseo aprender*, I desire to learn ; and oftentimes the Infinitive supplies the Nominative Case ; as, *amár a Dios y hacer bien al próximo, son los dos actos principales de un Cristiano*, to love God, and to do good to our neighbour, are the two principal actions of a Christian.

Anciently, when *le, la, les, las, los*, were added to the Infinitive, then *r* was often changed into *l* ; as *amalle* for *amárle*, *perdelle*, for *perderle*, *desille* for *decirle*,

cirle, to love him, to lose him, to tell him ; but it is now out of use. But when, *me, te, se, nos, &c.* follow the Infinitive immediately, then they are pronounced as monosyllables ; as, *decirle, decirselo, &c.*

Of the AUXILIARY VERBS.

Auxiliary Verbs take their etymology of the *Latin* *auxilium, auxillo*, help ; so called because they are wanted for, and help to, the Conjugation of other Verbs. There are auxiliary or helping Verbs in all the living languages, and in the *Spanish* there are more than in any other ; as, *podér, tenér, solér, ír, &c.* without which we cannot rightly explain the meaning of some sentences ; but there are three principal, viz. *haver*, (instead of which we use likewise the Verb *tenér*) to have ; *estár* and *ser*, to be. The two first serve for the Active, Neuter, and Reciprocal Verbs ; *haver* serves also for the Passive Verbs in their compound Tenses, as in the Preterperfect, Pluperfect, &c. and, the Verb *ser* serves for the Passive Verbs ; and, as the other Verbs cannot be conjugated without these, we think it proper to begin with them.

A General Scheme of the Termination of Regular Verbs of the three Spanish Conjugations, in their simple Tenses. 26

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.		Preterimperfect.		Preterperfect.		Future.	
Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.
1. o, as, a	ámos, áis, an	1. ába, ábas, ába	abámos, abáis, ában	1. é, até, ó	ámos, atéis, áron	1. aré, arás, ará	arémos, aréis, arán
2. } o, as, c	émos, éis, en	2. } ía, ías, ía	íámos, íáis, ían	2. } í, íste, íó	ímos, ístéis, íeron	2. eré, erás, erá	erémos, eréis, erán
3. }	ímos, ís, en	3. }		3. }		3. iré, irás, irá	irémos, iréis, irán

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing.	Plur.
1. a, e	émos, á, en
1. } e, a	amos, ed, en
2. }	émos, id, an

SUBJUNCTIVE, or OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.		First Preterimperfect.		Second Preterimperfect.		Third Preterperfect.	
Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.
1. c, es, e	émos, éis, an	1. ára, áras, ára	arámos, aráis, áran	1. áste, ástes, áste	ástémos, astéis, ásten	1. aría, arías, aría	ariámos, ariáis, arían
2. } a, as, a	ámos, áis, an	2. } iéra, iéras, iéra	ierámos, ieráis, iéran	2. } iéste, iéstes, iéste	iestémos, iestéis, iésten	2. ería, erías, ería	eríamos, eríais, erían
3. }		3. }		3. }		3. iría, irías, iría	iríamos, iríais, irían

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Future of the Subjunctive.		Present	Gerund.	Part. Pass.	Part. Act.
Sing.	Plur.				
1. áre, áres, áre	arémos, aréis, áren	1. ár	1. ándo	1. ádo	1. ánte
2. } iére, iéres, iére	ierémos, ieréis, iéren	2. ér	2. } iéndo	2. } ido	2. } iénte
3. }		3. ír	3. }	3. }	3. }

N. B. The figures 1, 2, 3, signify first, second, and third Conjugations.

All the Regular Verbs of the three Spanish Conjugations are easily conjugated, by changing the Terminations *ár, ér, ír*, of their Infinitive, into those represented above.

Of the AUXILIARY VERBS.

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb *haver*, To have.

The Indicative Mood.

Present :

Sing.	Plur.
yo he <i>I have</i>	nosotros <i>or</i> nos <i>hemos</i> , <i>or</i> <i>havemos</i> <i>We have</i>
tu has <i>Thou hast</i>	vosotros <i>or</i> vos <i>haveis</i> <i>Ye have</i>
el há <i>He has</i>	ellos han <i>They have</i>

Preterimperfect :

Sing.	{	havía <i>I had</i>
	{	havías <i>Thou hadst</i>
	{	havía <i>He had</i>
Plur.	{	haviámos <i>We had</i>
	{	haviáis <i>Ye had</i>
	{	havían <i>They had.</i>

First Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	huve <i>I had</i>
	{	huviste <i>Thou hadst</i>
	{	huvo <i>He had</i>
Plur.	{	huvimos <i>We had</i>
	{	huvisteis <i>Ye had</i>
	{	hubieron <i>They had.</i>

Second Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	yo he	} <i>havido</i> {	<i>I have had</i>
	{	tu has		<i>Thou hast had</i>
	{	el ha		<i>He has had</i>
Plur.	{	nos <i>hemos</i>	} <i>havido</i> {	<i>We have had</i>
	{	vos <i>haveis</i>		<i>Ye have had</i>
	{	ellos han		<i>They have had.</i>

The third Preterperfect, *yo huvé havido*, is not used in Spanish.

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	havía	} <i>havido</i> {	<i>I have had</i>
	{	havías		<i>Thou hadst had</i>
	{	havía		<i>He had had</i>
Plur.	{	haviámos	} <i>havido</i> {	<i>We had had</i>
	{	haviáis		<i>Ye had had</i>
	{	havían		<i>They had had.</i>

First

First Future :

Sing.	{	havré	<i>I shall or will have</i>
		havrás	<i>Thou shalt or wilt have</i>
		havrá	<i>He shall or will have</i>
Plur.	{	havrémós	<i>We shall or will have</i>
		havréis	<i>Ye shall or will have</i>
		havrán	<i>They shall or will have.</i>

The other Futures are,

Second F. , yo hé de haver *I must have*

Third, havré de haver *I shall be obliged to have*

Fourth, havía de haver *I was to have.*

* The Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	háyas tu	<i>Have thou</i>
		háya el	<i>Let him have</i>
Plur.	{	hayámos nos	<i>Let us have</i>
		havéd vos	<i>Have ye</i>
		háyan ellos	<i>Let them have.</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Present :

Oxala, plega a diòs, como :

Sing.	{	háya	}	<i>That I may have</i>
		háyas		
		háya		
Plur.	{	hayámos	}	<i>That we may have.</i>
		hayáis		
		háyan		

Three Preterimperfects :

Sing.	{	huviéra,	huviéste,	havría	}	<i>That I might, could, or should have.</i>
		huviéras,	huviésses,	havrias		
		huviéra,	huviéste,	havría		
Plur.	{	hubierámos,	hubiéssémos,	habriámos	}	<i>That we might, could, or should have.</i>
		hubieráis,	hubiésséis,	havriáis		
		hubiéran,	hubiéssen,	havrían		

Preterperfect :

háya	{	havído	{	<i>That I had, or have had</i>
háyas				
háya				
hayámos			{	<i>That we have had, &c.</i>
hayáis				
háyan				

* This Imperative is not in use now; and that of the Verb *tenér* is used to signify the same.

Two Preterpluperfects :

Sing.	{	huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	havído	{	If or that I had had, &c.
		huviéras, or huviéſſes				
		huviéra, or huviéſſe				
Plur.	{	huvierámos, or huviéſſemos	}		{	
		huvieráis, or huviéſſéis				
		huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First Future :

Sing.	{	huviére	}		{	If or when I shall have, &c.
		huviéres				
		huviére				
Plur.	{	huvierémos	}		{	
		huvieréis				
		huviéren				

Second Future :

Sing.	{	huviére	}	havído	{	If or when I shall have had, &c.
		huviéres				
		huviére				
Plur.	{	huvierémos	}		{	
		huvieréis				
		huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Pres.	haver	To have
Perf.	haver havído	To have had
Fut.	haver de haver	To have hereafter
Gerund	haviendo	Having
Partic.	havído	Had.

Note, That the Spanish Academy has changed *haver* into *haber* ; but as this is against the practice both of ancient and modern authors, I thought proper to conjugate and retain *haver*.

The other Auxiliary Verbs, *estar* and *ser*, To be.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	yo <i>estó</i> i	yo <i>so</i> i	}	I am
		tu <i>estás</i>	tu <i>éres</i>		
		el <i>está</i>	el <i>és</i>		
Plur.	{	nos <i>está</i> mos	nos <i>so</i> mos	}	We are
		vos <i>estáis</i>	vos <i>sois</i>		
		ellos <i>están</i>	ellos <i>son</i>		

Preter-

Preterimperfect:

Sing.	{	yo estaba	yo era	<i>I was</i>
		tu estabas	tu eras	<i>Thou wast</i>
		el estaba	el era	<i>He was</i>
Plur.	{	nos estabamos	nos eramos	<i>We were</i>
		vos estabais	vos erais	<i>Ye were</i>
		ellos estaban	ellos eran	<i>They were.</i>

First Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	estuve	fuí	<i>I have been</i>
		estuviste	fuiste	<i>Thou hast been</i>
		estuvo	fué	<i>He hath been</i>
Plur.	{	estuvimos	fuimos	<i>We have been</i>
		estuvisteis	fuisteis	<i>Ye have been</i>
		estuvieron	fuéron	<i>They have been.</i>

Second and third Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	hé or hube estado	hé or hube sido	} <i>I have been, &c.</i>
		has or huviste estado	has or huviste sido	
		ha or hubo estado	ha or hubo sido	
Plur.	{	hemos or huvimos estado	hemos or	} <i>I have been, &c.</i>
		haveis or huvisteis estado	[huvimos sido	
			haveis or	
		han or huvieron estado	[huvisteis sido	
			han or	
			[huvieron sido]	

Preterpluperfect:

Sing.	{	habia estado	habia sido	} <i>I had been, &c.</i>
		habias estado	habias sido	
		habia estado	habia sido	
Plur.	{	haviamos estado	haviamos sido	
		haviais estado	haviais sido	
		habian estado	habian sido	

First Future:

Sing.	{	estare	seré	} <i>I shall or will be, &c.</i>
		estaras	serás	
		estará	será	
Plur.	{	estaremos	seremos	
		estaréis	seréis	
		estarán	serán	

Second Future:

he or tengo de estar	he de ser	} <i>I must be, &c.</i>
has de estar	has de ser	
ha de estar	ha de ser, &c.	

Third

Third Future :

havré de-estár, or sér *I shall be obliged to be, &c.*

Fourth Future :

havía de-estár, or sér *I had to be, or I was to be, &c.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	está tu	fé tu	Be thou
		esté el-	féa el	Let him be
Plur.	{	estémos nos	seámos nos	Let us be
		estád vos	féd vos	Be ye
		estén ellos	féan ellos	Let them be.

Subjunctive Mood.

si or como, or óxala.

Sing.	{	esté	féa	} <i>If or when I am, &c.</i>
		estés	féas	
Plur.	{	esté	féa	
		estémos	seámos	
		estéis	seáis	
		estén	féan	

Three Preterperfects :

Sing.	{	estuviéra, estuviéssé,	fuéra, fuéssé,	} <i>If I was,</i>		
		<i>or estaría</i>	sería		} <i>I should,</i>	
		estuviéras, estuviésses,	fuéras, fuésses,			} <i>would be,</i>
		<i>or estarías</i>	serías			
		estuviéra, estuviéssé,	fuéra, fuéssé,			
Plur.	{	<i>or estaría</i>	sería	} <i>If we were,</i>		
		estuvierámos estuviéssémos,	fuerámos		} <i>should,</i>	
		<i>estariámos</i> [fuéssémos, seríámos	fueráís, fuésséis,			} <i>would, or</i>
		estuvieráís, estuviésséis,	seríáís			
		<i>estariáís</i>				
		estuviéran, estuviéssen,	fuéran, fuéssen,			
		<i>estárian</i>	serían			

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	háya estado	háya sido	} <i>If or when I have</i>	
		háyas estado	háyas sido		} <i>been, &c.</i>
		háya estado	háya sido		
Plur.	{	hayámos estado	hayámos sido		
		hayáis estado	hayáis sido		
		háyan estado	háyan sido		

First and second Preterpluperfect:

Sing.	{	hubiéra or hubiéſſe	estado or sido	} If or when I had been, &c.
		hubieras or hubiéſſes.		
		hubiéra or hubiéſſe		
Plur.	{	hubierámos or hubieſſémos		
		hubieráis or hubieſſéis		
		hubieran or hubiéſſen		

First Future:

Sing.	{	estuviére	fuére	} If I shall or should be, or when I had been.
		estuviéres	fuéres	
		estuviére	fuére	
Plur.	{	estuvierémos	fuerémos	
		estuvieréis	fueréis	
		estuviéren	fuéren	

Second Future:

Sing.	{	hubiére estado or sido	} When I shall or should have been.
		hubiéres	
		hubiére	
Plur.	{	hubierémos	
		hubieréis	
		hubiéren	

or quando havré, estado or sido.

Infinitive Mood.

Pres.	estár	ſér	To be
Perf.	haver estado	haver sido	To have been
Fut.	haver de estár	haver de ſér	To be hereafter
Gerund	estándo	ſiéndó	Being
Part.	estado	sido	Been.

Observations upon the Verbs ſér and estár.

There is a considerable difference between these Verbs *estár* and *ſér*, signifying both *to be*. In *English* there is no word to distinguish them. *Sér* signifies the proper and inseparable essence of a thing, its quality or quantity; as, *ſér hombre*, *ſér valiente*, *ſér alto*, *ſér chico*; but *estár* denotes a place, or any adjunct quality; as, *estár en Londres*, to be in London; *estár con salud*, to be in health; *estár enfermo*, to be sick. So, *estár* is used to express and denote any affection or passion

passion of the soul, or any accidental quality of a thing ; as *estár enojádo*, to be angry ; *esta mésa es buena*, pero *está mal bécha*, this table is good, but it is badly made ; where you may see the essential being of the table expressed by the Verb *ser*, and the accidental one by the Verb *estár*.

Of VERBS.

Verbs are divided into Personals and Impersonals. The Personals are subdivided into Active and Passive, Neuter and Reciprocal.

A Verb Active expresses the action of doing or transacting any thing, or else it expresses a passion ; as, *enseñar*, to teach ; *amár*, to love ; and is made Passive by the addition of the Auxiliary Verb *ser* ; as, *sói enseñado*, &c.

A Neuter Verb is that which signifies neither action nor passion ; as, *assentír*, to assent ; *corrér*, to run.

The Verb Reciprocal is that which returns its own action upon its agent or Nominative ; as *acostárse*, &c.

The *Spanish* tongue hath three Conjugations, viz.

- | | | |
|-------------------|-------|-------------------------------|
| 1. in <i>ár</i> ; | } as, | <i>cantár</i> , to sing, |
| 2. in <i>ér</i> ; | | <i>respondér</i> , to answer, |
| 3. in <i>ír</i> ; | | <i>recibír</i> , to receive. |

Example of the first Conjugation of Regular Verbs in *ár*.

Indicative Mood.

Present :

Sing.	{	yo canto	<i>I sing</i>
	{	tu cantas	<i>Thou singest</i>
	{	el canta	<i>He sings</i>
Plur.	{	nos cantamos	<i>We sing</i>
	{	vos cantáis	<i>Ye sing</i>
	{	ellos cantan	<i>They sing.</i>

Imperfect :

Sing.	{	yo cantaba	} <i>I did sing, &c.</i>
	{	tu cantabas	
	{	el cantaba	
Plur.	{	nos cantábamos	
	{	vos cantábais	
	{	ellos cantaban	

First Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	yo canté	}	<i>I sung, &c.</i>
		tu cantáste		
		el cantó		
Plur.	{	nos cantámos		
		vos cantásteis		
		ellos cantáron		

Second Perfect:

Sing.	{	yo he cantádo	}	<i>I have sung, &c.</i>
		tu has cantádo		
		el ha cantádo		
Plur.	{	nos hémos cantádo		
		vos havéis cantádo		
		ellos han cantádo		

Pluperfect:

Sing.	{	yo había	}	<i>cantádo, I had sung, &c.</i>
		tu havías		
		el había		
Plur.	{	nos havíamos		
		vos havíais		
		ellos havían		

First Future:

Sing.	{	yo cantaré	}	<i>I shall or will sing, &c.</i>
		tu cantarás		
		el cantará		
Plur.	{	nos cantaremos		
		vos cantaréis		
		ellos cantarán		

Second Future:

Sing.	{	yo hé <i>or</i> tengo de cantar	}	<i>I will sing, or I must sing, or I am to sing.</i>
		tu has <i>or</i> tienes de cantar		
		el ha <i>or</i> tiene de cantar		
Plur.	{	nos hémos <i>or</i> tenemos de cantar		
		vos havéis <i>or</i> tenéis de cantar		
		ellos han <i>or</i> tienen de cantar		

Third Future:

Sing.	{	yo havré	}	<i>de cantar, I shall be obliged to sing, &c.</i>
		tu havrás		
		el havrá		
Plur.	{	nos havremos		
		vos havréis		
		ellos havrán		

Fourth Future:

Sing.	{ yo había tu havías el había	} de cantár, <i>I was to sing, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ nos havíamos vos havíais ellos havían	

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ cánta tu cánte el	<i>Sing thou Let him sing</i>
Plur.	{ cantémos nos cantád vos cánten ellos	<i>Let us sing Sing ye Let them sing.</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with their signs,
oxalá, aunque, would God, although.

Present Tense:

Sing.	{ yo cante tu cantes el cante	} <i>Although I sing.</i>
Plur.	{ nos cantémos vos cantéis ellos canten	

Three Preterimperfects:

Sing.	{ yo cantára, cantásse, cantarí tu cantáras, cantásfes, cantarías el cantára, cantásse, cantarí	} <i>Although I did sing, or I could, I should, or I would sing, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ nos cantáramos, cantássemos, canta- [ríamos vos cantárais, cantásseis, cantaríais ellos cantáran, cantásßen, cantarían	

Perfect:

Sing.	{ yo háya tu háyas el háya	} cantádo, <i>Although I have sung, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ nos hayámos vos hayáis ellos háyan	

First and Second Pluperfect:

Sing.	{ yo hubiera or hubiéss tu hubieras or hubiésses el hubiera or hubiéss	} cantádo { <i>Although I had sung, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ nos hubiéramos or hubiéssemos vos hubierais or hubiésséis ellos hubieran or hubiéssen	

First Future :

Sing. { cantáre
cantáres
cantáre } *Although I shall sing, &c.*

Plur. { nós cantáremos
vos cantáreis
ellos cantáren } *Although we shall sing, &c.*

Second Future :

Sing. { hubiére
hubiéres
hubiére } cantádo, *Although I shall have sung.*
Plur. { hubiéremos
hubiéreis
hubiéren }

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	cantár	To sing
Perf.	haver cantádo	To have sung
Fut.	haver de cantár	To be obliged to sing
Gerund	cantádo	Singing
Part.	cantádo	Sung.

☞ All Regular Verbs, whose Infinitive is terminated in *ár*, are conjugated in the same manner as *cantár*.

Regular Verbs in *ár*.

Apartár, to set aside	alejár, to set at a distance
allanár, to smooth	accuñar, to accuse
ayunár, to fast	aparejár, to make ready
apelár, to smooth	acabár, to finish
acommozá, to adjust	amparár, to protect
aprovechá, to profit	apeár, to alight
arrastrár, to drag	abordár, to board
amenazár, to threaten	arrebatár, to snatch
afrentár, to affront	arrancár, to tear up
aventurár, to venture	amansár, to tame
amedrantár, to put in fear	ayudár, to help
alzár, to take up	amár, to love
atár, to tie	adorár, to adore
azotár, to whip	Besar, to kiss
alumbrár, to light	borrá, to blot out
alabár, to praise	bailár, to dance
alquilár, to let	bambaleár, to totter
adelantár, to forward	barajár, to shuffle at cards, to quarrel or embroil
animár, to encourage	

Comprár,

Comprár, to buy
 cantár, to sing
 cenár, to sup
 contestár, to contest
 curár, to cure
 cortár, to cut
 cabár, to dig
 cazár, to hunt
 caminár, to travel, to walk
 cansár, to tire
 callár, to be silent
 condenár, to condemn
 criár, to breed
 casár, to marry
 conformár, to conform
 Disparár, to discharge
 disfamár, to defame
 desafiár, to challenge
 desarraigár, to root up
 desamparár, to forsake
 despreciár, to despise
 dexár, to leave
 desnudár, to strip
 domár, to tame
 danzár, to dance
 desengañár, to undeceive
 despavilár la vela, to snuff the
 candle
 despavilár los ojos, to awake
 despojar, to strip
 Echár, to put out
 espantár, to frighten
 estimár, to esteem
 encantár, to enchant
 esternudár, to sneeze
 empeñár, to engage
 entrár, to come in
 embiár, to send
 enojár, to anger
 escaramuzár, to skirmish
 ensanchár, to widen
 Fiár, to trust
 fabricár, to manufacture
 facilitar, to facilitate
 falsificár, to falsify
 fatigár, to tire
 fomentár, to foment

Ganár, to gain
 gastár, to spend
 galantéar, to court
 gobernár, to govern
 guardár, to keep
 gloriár, to glory
 Hallár, to find
 hurtár, to steal
 honrár, to honour
 hablár, to speak
 Injuriár, to revile
 ignorár, to be ignorant
 Jurár, to swear
 Llamár, to call
 llorár, to weep
 levantár, to raise
 lavár, to wash
 lisongeár, to flatter
 Matár, to kill
 manchár, to stain
 mandár, to command
 menospreciár, to undervalue
 maltratár, to misuse
 mirár, to look
 Nadár, to swim
 narrár, to relate
 naturalizár, to naturalize
 navegár, to sail
 Olvidár, to forget
 ojeár, to ogle, or look over
 observár, to observe
 ocultár, to conceal
 Peleár, to fight
 pagar, to pay
 passeár, to walk
 procurar, to procure
 porfiár, to contend
 Rehusár, to refuse
 reculár, to draw back
 rezár, to pray
 retirár, to retire
 Separár, to separate
 saqueár, to plunder
 sudár, to sweat
 sitiár, to besiege
 Tartamudeár, to stammer
 tapár, to cover

Irregular Verbs in ár.

Dár, from dáre, Latin, To give.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	yo doy	<i>I give</i>
		tu das	<i>Thou givest</i>
		el dá	<i>He gives</i>
Plur.	{	nos damos	<i>We give</i>
		vos dáis	<i>Ye give</i>
		ellos dán	<i>They give.</i>

Preterimperfect :

yo dába, &c. *I did give (as in Regular Verbs.)*

First Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	yo dí	<i>I gave</i>
		tu díste	<i>Thou gavest</i>
		el dió	<i>He gave</i>
Plur.	{	nos dimos	<i>We gave</i>
		vos dísteis	<i>Ye gave</i>
		ellos diéron	<i>They gave.</i>

Second and Third Perfect :

yo hé or huvé dado, &c. *I have given, &c.*

Preterpluperfect :

yo había dado, &c. *I had given, &c.*

First Future :

Sing.	{	yo daré	} <i>I shall give, or I will give, &c.</i>
		tu darás	
		el dará	
Plur.	{	nos daremos	
		vos dareis	
		ellos darán	

Second Future :

yo hé de dár or tengo de dár, *I will give, or must give.*

Third Future :

yo havré de dár, *I shall be obliged to give.*

Fourth Future :

yo había de dár, *I was to give.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	dá tu	<i>Give thou</i>
		dé el	<i>Let him give</i>
Plur.	{	démos nos	<i>Let us give</i>
		dád vos	<i>Give ye</i>
		dén ellos	<i>Let them give.</i>

Subjunctive

Subjunctive Mood, with the signs, *comó, oxalá, &c.*

Present Tense:

yo dé (as in Regulars) *When I do give, &c.*

Three Imperfects:

Sing.	{	yo diéra, diésse, daría	} <i>When I might, could, should, or would give, &c.</i>
		diéras, diésses, darías	
		diéra, diésse, daría	
Plur.	{	diéramos, diéssemos, daríamos	
		diérais, diésséis, daríais	
		diéran, diéssen, darían	

Preterperfect:

yo háya dado, &c. *When I had given, &c.*

First and Second Preterpluperfect:

yo hubiéra or hubiéssse dado, *When I had given.*

First Future:

Sing.	{	yo diere	} <i>When I shall give, &c.</i>
		tu diéres	
		el diere	
Plur.	{	nos diéremos	
		vos diéreis	
		ellos diéren	

Second Future:

yo hubiere dado, &c. *When I shall or will have given.*

Infinitive Mood.

<i>Pres.</i>	dár	<i>To give</i>
<i>Preter.</i>	haver dado	<i>To have given</i>
<i>Fut.</i>	haver de dár	<i>To give hereafter</i>
<i>Gerund</i>	dándo	<i>Giving</i>
<i>Part. Pass.</i>	dádo	<i>Given.</i>

The Irregular Verb contar, To count.

Indicative Mood.

Present:

Sing.	{	cúento	<i>I count</i>
		cúentas	<i>Thou countest</i>
		cuenta	<i>He counts</i>
Plur.	{	contámos	<i>We count</i>
		contáis	<i>Ye count</i>
		cúentan	<i>They count</i>

Imperfect (as in Regulars.)

contába, &c. *I did count,*
contábas

The ELEMENTS of

First Perfect :

Sing.	{	conté	<i>I counted</i>
		contáste	<i>Thou, &c.</i>
		contó	
Plur.	{	contámos	
		contásteis	
		contáron	

Second Perfect :

hé contádo	<i>I have counted, &c.</i>
has contádo, &c.	

Preterpluperfect :

havía contádo	<i>I had counted, &c.</i>
havías contádo, &c.	

First Future :

Sing.	{	yo contaré	}	<i>I shall or will count, &c.</i>
		tu contarás		
		el contará		
Plur.	{	nos contaremos		
		vos contaréis		
		ellos contarán		

Second Future :

he de contar	<i>I must count, &c.</i>
--------------	------------------------------

Third Future :

havré de contar	<i>I shall be obliged to count, &c.</i>
-----------------	---

Fourth Future :

havía de contar	<i>I was to count, &c.</i>
-----------------	--------------------------------

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	cúenta tu	<i>Count thou</i>
		cúente el	<i>Let him count</i>
Plur.	{	contémos nos	<i>Let us count</i>
		contád vos	<i>Count ye</i>
		cúenten ellos	<i>Let them count.</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Moods,

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	cúente	}	<i>I count, &c.</i>
		cúentes		
		cúente, &c.		

The Three Imperfects :

contára, contásse, contaría,	<i>I did count, &c. (as in Regulars.)</i>
------------------------------	---

Preterperfect :

haya contádo, &c.	<i>I have counted.</i>
-------------------	------------------------

Two Pluperfects :

hubiéra or hubiéssse contádo,	<i>I had counted.</i>
hubiéras or hubiéssses contádo, &c.	<i>(as in Regulars.)</i>

First Future :

Sing.	{	yo contará	<i>I shall count</i>
		tu contarás	
		el contará, &c.	(as in Regulars.)

Second Future :

yo hubiere contado	{	<i>I will have counted, &c. (as in Regulars.)</i>	
tu hubieres, &c.		lars.)	

Infinitive Mood.

<i>Pres.</i>	contár	<i>To count</i>
<i>Perf.</i>	haber contado	<i>To have counted</i>
<i>Fut.</i>	haber de contar	<i>To count hereafter</i>
<i>Gerund</i>	contando	<i>Counting</i>
<i>Part. Pass.</i>	contado	<i>Counted.</i>

The irregularity of the following Verbs, conjugated as the Verb *contár*, consists only in changing the *o* of the penultima into *ue* in the three Persons Singular, and third Plural of the Present of the Indicative, Imperative, and Subjunctive Moods.

<i>Infinitive.</i>		<i>Pres. Ind.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>
acostarse, <i>to go to bed</i>		acuésto	acosté
apostar, <i>to wager</i>		apuéstó	aposté
acordar, <i>to remember</i>		acuérdo	acordé
consolar, <i>to comfort</i>		consuélo	consolé
pesollar, <i>to flay</i>		desuéllo	desollé
degollar, <i>to behead</i>		degüéllo	degollé
encontrar, <i>to meet</i>		encuénтро	encontré
esforzar, <i>to strengthen</i>		esfuérzo	esforzé
forzar, <i>to force</i>		fuérzo	forzé
hollar, <i>to trample on</i>		huéllo	hollé
mostrar, <i>to shew</i>		muéstro	mostré
provar, <i>to try</i>		pruévo	prové
resollar, <i>to breathe</i>		resuéllo	resollé
soltar, <i>to let loose</i>		fuélto	solté
sonar, <i>to sound</i>		fuéno	soné
tostar, <i>to toast</i>		tuéstó	toisté
volar, <i>to fly</i>		vuélo	volé.

☞ Observe, That the greater part of the Verbs having the Vowel *o* in the penultima, and ending in *ár*, are Irregulars.

The Verbs whose Infinitives end in *cár*, terminate the first person of their first Preterperfect in *que*, and the

the third Person Singular and Plural of the Imperative in *que* and *quen*, as also all the persons of the Present of the Subjunctive ; as,

arrancár,	to pluck out	embarcár,	to embark
bolcár,	to overturn	secár,	to dry
tocár,	to touch	abarcár,	to undertake
atacár,	to attack	ahorcár,	to hang.

The Verbs whose Infinitives end in *gár* are terminated, in the persons and tenses above mentioned, in *que* and *quen* ; as,

pagár,	to pay	rogár,	to pray
apagár,	to extinguish	agregár,	to aggregate
embargár,	to seize	regár,	to water.

To the Verbs having an *e* in the penultima of the Infinitive Mood, we must add an *i* before the said *e* in the three first persons Singular, and the third of the Plural, in the Present of the Indicative, Imperative, and Subjunctive ; as,

	<i>Ind.</i>	<i>Subj.</i>
acertár, to succeed	acierto	acierte
cerrár, to shut	ciérro	ciérre
confessár, to confess	confiéssó	confiéssé.

The Verb *andar*, to go, is irregular in the first Perfect of the Indicative Mood, and Imperfects and Future of the Subjunctive Mood ; and it is a general rule, when the first Perfect of the Indicative Mood is irregular, that the Imperfects and Future of the Subjunctive follow the same irregularity as in the Verb *andar*.

<i>1st Preterperf.</i>	<i>1st Imperf. Subj.</i>	<i>Fut. Subj.</i>
andúve	anduviéra	anduviére, &c.
anduviste	anduviéras, &c.	
andúvo		
anduvimos	<i>2d Imperf.</i>	
anduvisteis	anduviéssé	
anduvieron	anduviésses, &c.	

Of the Verbs Passive.

The Verbs Passive are formed from the Active, by adding the Participle Passive to the Auxiliary Verb, as in the Indicative.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{ foy	}	amádo	{	<i>I am loved</i>
	{ éres				<i>Thou art loved</i>
	{ es				<i>He is loved</i>
Plur.	{ sómos	}	amádos	{	<i>We are loved</i>
	{ sóys				<i>Ye are loved.</i>
	{ son				<i>They are loved.</i>

And so throughout the other Moods and Tenses.

Of the Reciprocal Verbs.

The Verbs called Reciprocal have all the Pronoun *se* after the Infinitive Mood, as *librar se*.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{ yo me libro	}		{	<i>I free myself, &c.</i>
	{ tu te libras				
	{ el se libra				
Plur.	{ nos librámos nos	}		{	
	{ vos libráis vos				
	{ ellos se libran				

Imperfect :

Sing.	{ me libraba	}		{	<i>I did free myself, &c.</i>
	{ te librabas				
	{ se libraba				
Plur.	{ nos librábamos	}		{	
	{ vos librábais				
	{ se libraban				

First Preterperfect :

Sing.	{ me libré	}		{	<i>I freed myself, &c.</i>
	{ te libraste				
	{ se libró				
Plur.	{ nos librámos	}		{	
	{ vos librasteis				
	{ se libraron				

Second Perfect :

me he librado	<i>I freed myself, &c.</i>
te has librado, &c.	

And

And so in all the Tenses and Moods but in
The Imperative.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ libra te libre se	} <i>Free thou thyself, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ librémos nos librád vos libren se	

Of Verbs Impersonal belonging to the first Conjugation.

Some of the Impersonals are Active, some Passive.
The Active are conjugated in this manner:

Nevár, *To snow.*

Indicative.

<i>Present,</i>	niéva	<i>It snows</i>
<i>Imperfect,</i>	nevába	<i>It did snow</i>
<i>1st Perfect,</i>	nevó	<i>It snowed</i>
<i>2d & 3d Perf.</i>	ha or húvo nevádo	<i>It has snowed</i>
<i>Pluperfect,</i>	havía nevádo	<i>It had snowed</i>
<i>Future,</i>	nevará	<i>It will snow.</i>

And so on, putting only the third person in every
Tense and Mood. In this manner are conjugated the
following :

atronár, <i>to thunder</i>	ahumár, <i>to smook</i>
granizár, <i>to hail</i>	constár, <i>to be plain, or clear</i>
helár, <i>to freeze</i>	importár, <i>to import, to be neces-</i>
relampagueár, <i>to lighten</i>	<i>sary.</i>

The Passive Impersonals are conjugated, by adding
the Particle *se* before or after the Verb ; as,

Indicative.

<i>Pres.</i>	se nota	<i>It is noted</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	se notába	<i>It was noted</i>
<i>Perf.</i>	se notó	} <i>It has been noted</i>
	se ha notádo	
<i>Pluperf.</i>	se havía notádo	<i>It had been noted</i>
<i>Future,</i>	se notará	<i>It will be noted.</i>

And so in the other Tenses and Moods.

Observe, that all the Verbs, except the Regular
Passive, may be conjugated by the Auxiliary Verb *estar*,
and

and the Gerund of the other Verb, through all the Moods and Tenses ; as,

Indicative.

<i>Pres.</i>	estoy hablando	<i>I am speaking</i>
	estás hablando	<i>Thou art speaking, &c.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	estaba hablando	<i>I was speaking, &c.</i>
<i>Perf.</i>	estuve hablando	<i>I have been speaking.</i>

The same must be observed in the two other Conjugations in *er* and *ir*.

Second Conjugation of Regular Verbs.

Indicative.

Present :

<i>Sing.</i>	{ yo vendo	<i>I sell</i>
	{ tu vendes	<i>Thou sellest</i>
	{ el vende	<i>He sells</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ nos vendémos	<i>We sell</i>
	{ vos vendéis	<i>Ye sell</i>
	{ ellos venden	<i>They sell.</i>

Imperfect :

<i>Sing.</i>	{ yo vendía	<i>I did sell</i>
	{ tu vendías	<i>Thou didst sell</i>
	{ el vendía	<i>He did sell</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ nos vendíamos	<i>We did sell</i>
	{ vos vendíais	<i>Ye did sell</i>
	{ ellos vendían	<i>They did sell.</i>

First Perfect :

<i>Sing.</i>	{ yo vendí	<i>I sold</i>
	{ tu vendiste	<i>Thou soldest</i>
	{ el vendió	<i>He sold</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ nos vendimos	<i>We sold</i>
	{ vos vendisteis	<i>Ye sold</i>
	{ ellos vendieron	<i>They sold.</i>

Second and Third Perfect :

<i>Sing.</i>	{ yo he or hube	} vendido, <i>I have sold, &c.</i>
	{ tu has or huviste	
	{ el ha or hubo	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ nos hemos or huvimos	
	{ vos habéis or huvisteis	
	{ ellos han or hubieron	

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	yo había	}	vendido, <i>I had sold, &c.</i>
		tu havías		
		el había		
Plur.	{	nos havíamos		
		vos havíais		
		ellos havían		

Future :

Sing.	{	yo venderé	}	<i>I shall or will sell, &c.</i>
		tu venderás		
		el venderá		
Plur.	{	nos venderémos		
		vos venderéis		
		ellos venderán		

Imperative.

Sing.	{	vénde tu	}	<i>Sell thou</i>
		vénda el		<i>Let him sell</i>
Plur.	{	vendámos nos	}	<i>Let us sell</i>
		vendéd vos		<i>Sell ye</i>
		véndan ellos		<i>Let them sell.</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Moods.

Present :

Sing.	{	yo vénda	}	<i>I may sell, &c.</i>
		tu véndas		
		el vénda		
Plur.	{	nos vendámos		
		vos vendáis		
		ellos véndan		

Imperfects :

Sing.	{	yo vendiéra, vendiéſſe, vendería	}	<i>I could, should, or would sell, &c.</i>
		tu vendiéras, vendiéſſes, venderías		
		el vendiéra, vendiéſſe, vendería		
Plur.	{	nos vendiéramos, vendiéſſemos, venderíamos		
		vos vendiéráis, vendiéſſeis, venderíais		
		ellos vendiéran, vendiéſſen, venderían		

Preterperfect :

yo haya vendido *I have sold, &c.*

Preterpluperfect :

yo hubiéra or hubiéſſe vendido *I had sold, &c.*

First

First Future:

Sing.	{	yo vendiere	} <i>I shall or will sell, &c.</i>
		tu vendieras	
		el vendiere	
Plur.	{	nos vendiéremos	
		vos vendiereis	
		ellos vendieren	

Second Future:

yo hubiere vendido	<i>I shall have sold</i>
tu hubieras, &c.	<i>Thou shalt have sold, &c.</i>

Infinitive Mood.

<i>Present,</i>	vender	<i>To sell</i>
<i>Perfect,</i>	haber vendido	<i>To have sold</i>
<i>Future,</i>	haber de vender	<i>To sell hereafter</i>
<i>Gerund,</i>	vendiendo	<i>Selling</i>
<i>Part. Pass.</i>	vendido	<i>Sold.</i>

After the same manner are conjugated all the other Regular Verbs of the second Conjugation ending in *er*; such are the following:

acometer,	<i>to attack</i>	escondér,	<i>to hide</i>
bever,	<i>to drink</i>	emprender,	<i>to undertake</i>
barrer,	<i>to sweep</i>	meter,	<i>to put in</i>
correspondér,	<i>to correspond</i>	ofender,	<i>to offend</i>
comér,	<i>to eat</i>	prometer,	<i>to promise</i>
corrér,	<i>to run</i>	responder,	<i>to answer</i>
concedér,	<i>to grant</i>	reprehender,	<i>to reprove</i>
cometer,	<i>to commit</i>	temér,	<i>to fear.</i>
devér,	<i>to owe</i>		

Of Verbs Irregular of the Second Conjugation in er.

cabér,	<i>to be contained</i>	trahér,	<i>to bring</i>
hacér,	<i>to do, to make</i>	tenér,	<i>to have or to hold</i>
podér,	<i>to be able</i>	sabér,	<i>to know</i>
ponér,	<i>to put or to place</i>	vér,	<i>to see.</i>
querér,	<i>to will or to love</i>		

Conjugation

Conjugation of the Verb cabér, To be contained.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense:

Sing.	{	yo quépo	} <i>I am contained, &c.</i>
		tu cábes	
		el cábe	
Plur.	{	nos cabémos	
		vos cabéis	
		ellos cáben	

Imperfect:

cabía	<i>I was contained</i>
cabías, &c.	<i>Thou wast, &c.</i>

Perfect:

Sing.	{	cúpe	} <i>I have been contained, &c.</i>
		cupiste	
		cúpo	
Plur.	{	cupímos	
		cupístéis	
		cupiéron	

Second Perfect:

he or húve cabído	<i>I have been contained, &c.</i>
-------------------	---------------------------------------

Pluperfect:

havía cabído	<i>I have been contained, &c.</i>
--------------	---------------------------------------

First Future:

Sing.	{	cabré	} <i>I shall or will be contained, &c.</i>
		cabrás	
		cabrá	
Plur.	{	cabrémos	
		cabréis	
		cabrán	

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	cábe tu	<i>Be thou contained</i>
		quépa el	<i>Let him be contained</i>
Plur.	{	quepámos nos	<i>Let us be contained</i>
		cabéd vos	<i>Let ye be contained</i>
		quépan ellos	<i>Let them be contained.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present:

yo quépa	<i>I may be contained</i>
tu quépas	<i>Thou, &c.</i>

Imperfects:

Imperfects :

Sing.	{	cupiéra, cupiéſſe, cabría	} <i>I could, would, or should be contained, &c.</i>
		cupiéras, cupiéſſes, cabrían	
		cupiéra, cupiéſſe, cabría	
Plur.	{	cupiéramos, cupiéſſemos, cabríamos	
		cupiérais, cupiéſſeis, cabríaís	
		cupiéran, cupiéſſen, cabrían	

Perfect :

háya cabído *I have been contained, &c.*
háyas cabído, &c.

Pluperfect :

hubiéra or hubiéſſe cabído, &c. *I had been contained, &c.*

First Future :

Sing.	{	yo cupiére	} <i>I shall or will be contained, &c.</i>
		tu cupiéres	
		el cupiére	
Plur.	{	nos cupiéremos	
		vos cupiéreis	
		ellos cupiéren	

Second Future :

yo hubiére cabído *I shall have been contained, &c.*

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	cabér	<i>To be contained</i>
Perfect,	haver cabído	<i>To have been contained</i>
Future,	haver de cabér	<i>To be contained hereafter</i>
Gerund,	cabiéndo	<i>Being contained</i>
Part. Pass.	cabído	<i>Contained.</i>

The Irregular Verb hácer, *To do, or to make.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	yo hago	<i>I do or I make</i>
		tu haces	<i>Thou doest or makest</i>
		el hace	<i>He does</i>
Plur.	{	nos hacemos	<i>We do</i>
		vos hacéis	<i>Ye do</i>
		ellos hacen	<i>They do.</i>

E

Imperfect :

Imperfect :

Sing.	{	yo hacía	} <i>I did or I did make, &c.</i>
		tu hacías	
		el hacía	
Plur.	{	nos hacíamos	
		vos hacíais	
		ellos hacían	

First Perfect :

Sing.	{	yo hize	} <i>I made, &c.</i>
		tu hiziste	
		el hizo	
Plur.	{	nos hizimos	
		vos hizisteis	
		ellos hizieron	

Second Perfect :

yo he hecho	<i>I have done or made, &c.</i>
tu has hecho, &c.	

Pluperfect :

yo había hecho,	<i>I had done or made, &c.</i>
-----------------	------------------------------------

First Future :

Sing.	{	yo haré	} <i>I shall do or make, &c.</i>
		tu harás	
		el hará	
Plur.	{	nos harémos	
		vos haréis	
		ellos harán	

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	ház tu	<i>Do or make thou</i>
		haga el	<i>Let him do or make</i>
Plur.	{	hagámos nos	<i>Let us make or do</i>
		hacéd vos	<i>Let ye do or make ye</i>
		hagan ellos	<i>Let them do or make.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

(que)	yo haga	<i>I may do or make</i>
	tu hagas	<i>Thou, &c.</i>

Imperfects :

Sing.	{	hiziéra, hiziéffe, haría	} <i>I should, could, or would do or make, &c.</i>
		hiziéras, hiziéffes, harías	
		hiziéra, hiziéffe, haría	
Plur.	{	hiziéramos, hiziéffemos, haríamos	
		hiziérais, hiziéffes, haríais	
		hiziéran, hiziéffen, harían	

Perfect :

Perfect:

yo háya hécho *I have made or done, &c.*

Pluperfect:

yo hubiéera or hubiéſſe hécho *I had made, &c.*

First Future:

Sing.	{ yo hiziére tu hiziéres el hiziére	} <i>I ſhall do or make, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ nos hiziéremos vos hiziéreis ellos hiziéren	

Second Future:

yo hubiéere hécho *I ſhall have done or made, &c.*

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	hacér	<i>To do or make</i>
Perfect,	havér hécho	<i>To have done</i>
Future,	havér de hacér	<i>To do hereafter</i>
Gerund,	haciendo	<i>Doing or making</i>
Part. Pass.	hécho	<i>Done or made.</i>

After the ſame manner are conjugated the following Verbs; *deſhacér*, to undo; *contrabacér*, to counterfeit; *rebacér*, to make again.

The Irregular Verb poder, To be abl.

The Indicative Mood.

Present Tenſe:

Sing.	{ yo puédo tu puédes el puéde	<i>I am able or I can Thou art able or thou canſt He can or he is able</i>
Plur.	{ nos podemos vos podéis ellos pueden	<i>We can or we are able Ye can or ye are able They can or are able.</i>

Imperfect:

Sing.	{ podía podías podía	<i>I could or was able Thou couldſt or waſt able He could or was able</i>
Plur.	{ podíamos podíais podían	<i>We could or were able Ye could or were able They could or were able.</i>

First Perfect:

Sing.	{	yo púde	}	<i>I could or have been able.</i>
		tu pudiste		
		el púdo		
Plur.	{	nos pudimos		
		vos pudisteis		
		ellos pudieron		

Second Perfect:

yo he podido *I have been able, &c.*
 tu has podido, &c,

Pluperfect:

había podido *I have been able, &c.*

Future:

Sing.	{	podré	}	<i>I shall or will be able, &c.</i>
		podrás		
		podrá		
Plur.	{	podremos		
		podréis		
		podrán		

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present:

(que) Sing.	{	puéda	}	<i>I may be able, &c.</i>
		puédas		
		puéda		
Plur.	{	podámos		
		podáis		
		puédan		

Imperfects:

Sing.	{	pudiéra, pudiesse, podría	}	<i>I could, should, or would be able, &c.</i>
		pudiéras, pudieses, podrías		
		pudiéra, pudiesse, podría		
Plur.	{	pudiéramos, pudiessemos, podríamos		
		pudiérais, pudiesseis, podríais		
		pudiéran, pudiesen, podrían		

Perfect:

yo haya podido, &c. *I have been able, &c.*

Pluperfect:

hubiéra or hubiesse podido, &c. *I have been able, &c.*

First Future :

Sing.	{	pudiére	}	<i>I shall or will be able, &c.</i>
		pudieses		
		pudiére		
Plur.	{	pudiéremos		
		pudiéreis		
		pudiéren		

Second Future :

hubiere podido, &c. *I shall have been able, &c.*

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	podér	<i>To be able</i>
Perfect,	haber podido	<i>To have been able</i>
Future,	haber de podér	<i>To be able hereafter</i>
Gerund,	pudiendo	<i>Being able</i>
Part. Pass.	podido	<i>Been able.</i>

The Irregular Verb poner, To place.

Indicative Mood.

Present :

Sing.	{	yo pongo	<i>I place</i>
		tu pones	<i>Thou placest</i>
		el pone	<i>He places</i>
Plur.	{	nos ponemos	<i>We place</i>
		vos ponéis	<i>Ye place</i>
		ellos ponen	<i>They place.</i>

Imperfect :

ponía, *I did place, &c.*
ponías, &c.

First Perfect :

Sing.	{	yo puse	}	<i>I placed, &c.</i>
		tu pusiste		
		el puso		
Plur.	{	nos pusimos		
		vos pusisteis		
		ellos pusieron		

Second Perfect :

yo he puesto, *I have placed, &c.*
tu has puesto, &c.

Preterpluperfect :

había puesto, *I had put, &c.*

The ELEMENTS of

First Future :

yo pondré *or* yo ponré, *I shall or will put, &c.*

Second Future :

he de ponér *I must put, &c.*

Third and Fourth Future :

havré de ponér *I shall be obliged to put.*

havía de ponér *I was to put.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	pon tu	<i>Put thou</i>
		ponga el	<i>Let him put</i>
Plur.	{	pongámos nos	<i>Let us put</i>
		ponéd vos	<i>Put ye</i>
		pongan ellos	<i>Let them put.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods,

Present Tense :

(que) Sing.	{	ponga	} <i>I may put, &c.</i>
		pongas	
Plur.	{	ponga	
		pongámos	
		pongáis	
		póngan	

Imperfects :

Sing.	{	pusiéra, pusiéſſe, ponría <i>or</i> pondría	} <i>I should, could, would, or might put, &c.</i>
		pusiéras, pusiéſſes, ponrían, <i>or</i> pondrían	
		pusiéra, pusiéſſe, ponría <i>or</i> pondría	
Plur.	{	pusiéramos, pusiéſſemos, ponríamos <i>or</i> [pondríamos	
		pusiérais, pusiéſſeis, ponríaís <i>or</i> pon- [dríaís	
		pusiéran, pusiéſſen, ponrían <i>or</i> pon- [drían	

Preterperfect :

haya puéſto, *I have put, &c.*

Preterpluperfects :

hubiéſra *or* hubiéſſe puéſto, *I had put, &c.*

First Future :

Sing.	{	pusiere	} <i>I shall or will put, &c.</i>
		pusieres	
Plur.	{	pusiere	
		pusieremos	
		pusiereis	
		pusieren	

Second Future :

hubiere puésto, *I shall have put.*

Infinitive Mood.

<i>Present,</i>	ponér	<i>To put</i>
<i>Perfect,</i>	haver puésto	<i>To have put</i>
<i>Gerund,</i>	poniendo	<i>Putting</i>
<i>Part. Pass.</i>	puésto	<i>Put.</i>

After the same manner are conjugated the following Verbs:

anteponér, <i>to prefer</i>	imponér, <i>to impose</i>
componér, <i>to compose, or to mend</i>	proponér, <i>to propose</i>
disponér, <i>to dispose</i>	reponér, <i>to answer, to reply;</i>

and any other Verb derived from ponér.

The Irregular Verb querér, To will, to love, or to chuse.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

<i>Sing.</i>	{	yo quíero	<i>I will or love</i>
		tu quíeres	<i>Thou wilt or lovest</i>
		el quíere	<i>He wills or loves</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	nos queremos	<i>We will or love</i>
		vos queréis	<i>Ye will or love</i>
		ellos quíeren	<i>They will or love.</i>

Preterimperfect :

<i>Sing.</i>	{	quería	<i>I did will or love</i>
		querías	<i>Thou didst will or love</i>
		quería	<i>He did will or love</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	queríamos	<i>We did will or love</i>
		queríais	<i>Ye did will or love</i>
		querían	<i>They did will or love.</i>

First Preterperfect :

<i>Sing.</i>	{	quise	<i>I willed or loved</i>
		quisiste	<i>Thou willedst or lovedst</i>
		quiso	<i>He willed or loved</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	quisimos	<i>We willed or loved</i>
		quisisteis	<i>Ye willed or loved</i>
		quisieron	<i>They willed or loved.</i>

Second Perfect :

he or have querido, *I have willed or loved, &c.*

Preterpluperfect:

havía querido *I had willed or loved, &c.*

First Future:

Sing.	{	querré	} <i>I shall will or love, &c.</i>
		querrás	
		querrá	
Plur.	{	querrémos	
		querréis	
		querrán	

Second Future:

yo he de querer *I must will or love, &c.*

Third Future:

habré de querer *I shall be obliged to love, &c.*

Fourth Future:

havía de querer *I was to love.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	quíere tu	<i>Will you or love you</i>
		quíera el	<i>Let him will or love</i>
Plur.	{	querámos nos	<i>Let us will or love</i>
		queréd vos	<i>Will ye or love</i>
		quíeran ellos	<i>Let them will or love.</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Moods.

Present Tense:

(que)	{	quíera	} <i>I may love, &c.</i>
Sing.		quíeras	
		quíera	
Plur.	{	querámos	
		queráis	
		quíeran	

Three Imperfects:

Sing.	{	quisiera, quisiéste, querría	} <i>I should, would, or could love &c.</i>
		quisieras, quisieses, querrías	
		quisiera, quisiéste, querría	
Plur.	{	quisiéramos, quisiésemos, querríamos	
		quisiérais, quisiésseis, querríais	
		quisieran, quisiessen, querrían	

Preterperfect:

yo haya querido *I had desired or loved, &c.*

Preterpluperfect:

hubiera or hubiése querido *I had desired or loved, &c.*

First Future :

Sing.	{	quiere	} <i>I shall will or love, &c.</i>
		quieres	
		quiere	
Plur.	{	quiere	
		quiere	
		quiere	

Second Future :

hubiere querido, &c. *I shall be willing, or shall love, &c.*

Infinitive Mood.

Pres.	querer	<i>To will or to love</i>
Preter.	haber querido	<i>To have willed or loved</i>
Fut.	haber de querer	<i>To will or to love hereafter</i>
Gerund.	queriendo	<i>Willing or loving</i>
Part.	querido	<i>Willed or loved.</i>

The Irregular Verb trahér, To bring.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	yo trahigo	<i>I bring</i>
		tu tráhes	<i>Thou bringest</i>
		el tráhe	<i>He brings</i>
Plur.	{	nos trahémos	<i>We bring</i>
		vos trahéis	<i>Ye bring</i>
		ellos trahen	<i>They bring.</i>

Preterimperfect :

Sing.	{	trahía	<i>I did bring</i>
		trahías	<i>Thou didst bring</i>
		trahía	<i>He did bring</i>
Plur.	{	trahíamos	<i>We did bring</i>
		trahíais	<i>Ye did bring</i>
		trahían	<i>They did bring.</i>

First Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	tráxe or trúxe	<i>I brought</i>
		traxíste or truxíste	<i>Thou broughtest</i>
		tráxo or trúxo	<i>He brought</i>
Plur.	{	traxímos or truxímos	<i>We brought</i>
		traxísteis or truxísteis	<i>Ye brought</i>
		traxéron or truxéron	<i>They brought.</i>

Second

Second Perfect:

he or huve trahído *I have brought, &c.*

Preterpluperfect:

havia trahído *I had brought, &c.*

First Future:

Sing.	{	traheré	<i>I shall or will bring</i>
		traherás	<i>Thou wilt bring, &c.</i>
		traherá	<i>He will bring</i>
Plur.	{	traherémos	<i>We will bring</i>
		traheréis	<i>Ye will bring</i>
		traherán	<i>They will bring.</i>

Second Future:

he de trahér, *I must bring, &c.*

Third Future:

havré de trahér, *I will be obliged to bring, &c.*

Fourth Future:

havía de trahér, *I was to bring, &c.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	tráhe tu	<i>Bring thou</i>
		trahíga el	<i>Let him bring</i>
Plur.	{	trahigámos nos	<i>Let us bring</i>
		trahéd vos	<i>Let ye bring</i>
		trahígan ellos	<i>Let them bring.</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Moods.

Present Tense:

(que) Sing.	{	trahíga	} <i>I may bring, &c.</i>
		trahígas	
Plur.	{	trahíga	
		trahigámos	
		trahigáis	
		trahígan	

Preterimperfects:

Sing.	{	traxéra, traxéſſe, traxería	} <i>I would, should, or could bring, &c.</i>
		traxéras, traxéſſes, traxerías	
		traxéra, traxéſſe, traxería	
Plur.	{	traxéramos, traxéſſemos, traxeríamos	
		traxérais, traxéſſeis, traxeríais	
		traxéran, traxéſſen, traxerían	

Preter.

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{ háya	} trahído, <i>I have brought, &c.</i>
	{ háyas	
	{ háya	
Plur.	{ hayámos	
	{ hayáis	
	{ háyan	

Two Preterpluperfects :

Sing.	{ hubiéra or hubiéſſe trahído	} <i>I had brought, &c.</i>
	{ hubiéras or hubiéſſes	
	{ hubiéra or hubiéſſe	
Plur.	{ hubiéramos or hubiéſſemos	
	{ hubiérais or hubiéſſeis	
	{ hubiéran or hubiéſſen	

First Future :

Sing.	{ traxére or truxére	} <i>I ſhall bring, &c.</i>
	{ traxéres or truxéres	
	{ traxére or truxére	
Plur.	{ traxéremos or truxéremos	
	{ traxéreis or truxéreis	
	{ traxéren or truxéren	

Second Future :

hubiére trahído	<i>I ſhall have brought, &c.</i>
-----------------	--------------------------------------

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	trahér	<i>To bring</i>
Perſect,	haver trahído	<i>To have brought</i>
Future,	haver de trahér	<i>To bring hereafter</i>
Gerund,	trahiéndo	<i>Bringing</i>
Part. Paſſ.	trahído	<i>Brought.</i>

After the ſame manner are conjugated the Compound Verbs, *retrahér*, *contrahér*, to contract ; *distrabér*, to diſtract ; *atrabér*, to attract, &c.

The Irregular Verb ſabér, To know.

Indicative Mood.

Preſent Tenſe :

Sing.	{ yo ſé	<i>I know</i>
	{ tu ſábes	<i>Thou knoweſt</i>
	{ el ſábe	<i>He knows</i>
Plur.	{ nos ſabémos	<i>We know</i>
	{ vos ſabéis	<i>Ye know</i>
	{ ellos ſáben	<i>They know.</i>

Imperfect :

Imperfect :

Sing.	{	fabía	<i>I did know</i>
		fabías	<i>Thou didst know</i>
		fabía	<i>He did know</i>
Plur.	{	fabíamos	<i>We did know</i>
		fabíais	<i>Ye did know</i>
		fabían	<i>They did know.</i>

First Perfect :

Sing.	{	fúpe	<i>I knew</i>
		fupíste	<i>Thou knewest</i>
		fúpo	<i>He knew</i>
Plur.	{	fupímos	<i>We knew</i>
		fupísteis	<i>Ye knew</i>
		fupiéron	<i>They knew.</i>

Second Perfect :

Sing.	{	hé sabído	<i>I have known</i>
		has sabído	<i>Thou hast known</i>
		ha sabído	<i>He has known</i>
Plur.	{	hemos sabído	<i>We have known</i>
		havéis sabído	<i>Ye have known</i>
		han sabído	<i>They have known.</i>

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	havía or hube	} sabído, <i>I had known, &c.</i>
		havías	
		havía	
Plur.	{	havíamos	
		havíais	
		havían	

First Future :

Sing.	{	fabré	<i>I shall or will know</i>
		fabrás	<i>Thou shalt or wilt know</i>
		fabrá	<i>He shall or will know</i>
Plur.	{	fabrémos	<i>We shall or will know</i>
		fabréis	<i>Ye shall or will know</i>
		fabrán	<i>They shall or will know.</i>

Second Future :

hé de fabér	<i>I must know, &c.</i>
-------------	-----------------------------

Third Future :

havré de fabér	<i>I will be obliged to know.</i>
----------------	-----------------------------------

Fourth Future :

havía de fabér	<i>I was to know, &c.</i>
----------------	-------------------------------

Imperative

Imperative Mood:

Sing.	{	sábe tu	<i>Know thou</i>
	{	sepá el	<i>Let him know</i>
Plur.	{	sepámos nos	<i>Let us know</i>
	{	sabéd vos	<i>Know ye</i>
	{	sepán ellos	<i>Let them know.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present Tense:

(que)	Sing.	{	fépa	} <i>I may know, &c.</i>
			fépas	
			fépa	
Plur.	{	sepámos		
		sepáis		
		fépan		

Three Imperfects:

Sing.	{	supiera, supiese, sabría	} <i>I would, could, or should know, &c.</i>
		supieras, supieses, sabrías	
		supiera, supiese, sabría	
Plur.	{	supiéramos, supiésemos, sabríamos	
		supiérais, supiéseis, sabríaís	
		supieran, supiesen, sabrían	

Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	haya sabido	} <i>I have known, &c.</i>
		hayas sabido	
		haya sabido	
Plur.	{	hayámos sabido	
		hayáis sabido	
		hayan sabido	

Preterpluperfect:

Sing.	{	hubiera or hubiese sabido	} <i>I had known, &c.</i>
		hubieras or hubieses	
		hubiera or hubiese	
Plur.	{	hubiéramos or hubiésemos	
		hubiérais or hubieseis	
		hubieran or hubiesen	

First Future:

Sing.	{	supiere	} <i>I shall or will know, &c.</i>
		supieres	
		supiere	
Plur.	{	supiéremos	
		supiereis	
		supieren	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	hubiere sabido	} <i>I shall have known, &c.</i>
		hubieres sabido	
		hubiere sabido	
Plur.	{	hubiéremos sabido	
		hubiereis sabido	
		hubiéren sabido	

Infinitive Mood.

<i>Present,</i>	saber	<i>To know</i>
<i>Perfect,</i>	haber sabido	<i>To have known</i>
<i>Future,</i>	haber de saber	<i>To know hereafter</i>
<i>Gerund,</i>	sabiendo	<i>Knowing</i>
<i>Part. Pass.</i>	sabido	<i>Known.</i>

The Irregular Verb ver, To see.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	yo veo	<i>I see</i>
		tu ves	<i>Thou seest</i>
		el vé	<i>He sees</i>
Plur.	{	nos vemos	<i>We see</i>
		vos véis	<i>Ye see</i>
		ellos vén	<i>They see.</i>

Imperfect :

Sing.	{	veía	<i>I did see</i>
		veías	<i>Thou didst see</i>
		veía	<i>He did see</i>
Plur.	{	veíamos	<i>We did see</i>
		veíais	<i>Ye did see</i>
		veían	<i>They did see.</i>

Observe, that *via* in that Tense is never used, although it is found in all the *Spanish* and *English* Grammars. *Vide*, in the first Perfect, is likewise obsolete.

First Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	ví	<i>I saw</i>
		viste	<i>Thou sawst</i>
		vió	<i>He saw</i>
Plur.	{	vimos	<i>We saw</i>
		visteis	<i>Ye saw</i>
		viéron	<i>They saw.</i>

Second Perfect :

Sing.	{	he visto	<i>I have seen</i>
	{	has visto	<i>Thou hast seen</i>
	{	ha visto	<i>He has seen</i>
Plur.	{	hemos visto	<i>We have seen</i>
	{	haveis visto	<i>Ye have seen</i>
	{	han visto	<i>They have seen.</i>

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	havía	} visto, <i>I had seen, &c.</i>
	{	havías	
	{	havía	
Plur.	{	havíamos	
	{	havíais	
	{	havían	

First Future :

Sing.	{	veré	<i>I shall or will see</i>
	{	verás	<i>Thou shalt or wilt see</i>
	{	verá	<i>He shall or will see</i>
Plur.	{	veremos	<i>We shall or will see</i>
	{	veréis	<i>Ye shall or will see</i>
	{	verán	<i>They shall or will see.</i>

Second Future :

Sing.	{	he de vér	<i>I must see</i>
	{	has de vér	<i>Thou must see</i>
	{	ha de vér	<i>He must see</i>
Plur.	{	hemos de vér	<i>We must see</i>
	{	haveis de vér	<i>Ye must see</i>
	{	han de vér	<i>They must see.</i>

The two other Futures as above in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	vé tu	<i>See thou</i>
	{	véa el	<i>Let him see</i>
Plur.	{	veámos nos	<i>Let us see</i>
	{	ved vos	<i>See ye</i>
	{	véan ellos	<i>Let them see.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present Tense :

(que) Sing.	{	yo véa	} <i>I may see, &c.</i>
	{	tu véas	
	{	el véa	
Plur.	{	nos veámos	
	{	vos veáis	
	{	ellos véan	

Imperfects :

Imperfects :

Sing.	{	viéra, viéſſe, vería	} <i>I could, I would, I should see, &c.</i>
		viéras, viéſſes, verías	
		viéra, viéſſe, vería	
Plur.	{	viéramos, viéſſemos, veríamos	
		viérais, viéſſeis, veríais	
		viéran, viéſſen, verían	

Perfect :

Sing.	{	háya	} <i>visto, I have seen, &c.</i>
		háyas	
		háya	
Plur.	{	hayámos	
		hayáis	
		háyan	

Pluperfect :

Sing.	{	hubiéra or hubiéſſe	} <i>visto, I had seen, &c.</i>
		hubiéras or hubiéſſes	
		hubiéra or hubiéſſe	
Plur.	{	hubiéramos or hubiéſſemos	
		hubiérais or hubiéſſeis	
		hubiéran or hubiéſſen	

First Future :

Sing.	{	viére	} <i>I shall or will see, &c.</i>
		viéres	
		viére	
Plur.	{	viéremos	
		viéreis	
		viéren	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	hubiére	} <i>visto, I shall have seen, &c.</i>
		hubiéres	
		hubiére	
Plur.	{	hubiéremos	
		hubiéreis	
		hubiéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Pres.	vér	<i>To see</i>
Perf.	haver visto	<i>To have seen</i>
Fut.	haver de vér	<i>To see hereafter</i>
Gerund,	viéndo	<i>Seeing</i>
Part. Pass.	visto	<i>Seen.</i>

Of the Verbs ending in *cér*.

The following Verbs, whose Infinitives end in *cér*, are terminated in *sco* in the Present of the Indicative Mood,

Mood in the first Person; but all the other Persons are conjugated without adding the *s*.

The third Person Singular of the Imperative Mood ends in *sca*, the first Person Plural in *scamos*, and the third Person Plural in *scan*.

The Termination of all the Persons of the Present Subjunctive Mood is as follows:

Sing.	{ <i>sca</i> <i>scas</i> <i>sca</i>	Plur.	{ <i>scámos</i> <i>scáis</i> <i>scan</i>
-------	---	-------	--

But in all other Tenses or Moods *s* is not used before *c*, although a great many of those Verbs are derived from the *Latin*; as you may see in the following List:

Indicative.

		Present	Preterperfect.
Adolecér,	to grow sick	adolesco	adoleci
agradecér,	to thank	agradesco	agradeci
amanecér,	to rise soon	amanesco	amaneci
apetecér,	to desire	apetesco	apeteci
Compadecér,	to pity	compadesco	compadeci
conocer,	to know	conosco	conoci
crecér,	to grow	cresco	creci
Desfallecér,	to faint	desfallesco	desfalleci
desvanecér,	to vanish	desvanesco	desvaneci
Encarecér,	to grow dearer	encaresco	encareci
establecér,	to establish	establesco	estableci
enflaquecér,	to grow lean	enflaquezco	enflaqueci
empobrecér,	to grow poor	empobrezco	empobrececi
enriquecér,	to grow rich	enriquezco	enriquececi
endurecér,	to grow hard	endurezco	endurececi
engrandecér,	to magnify	engrandezco	engrandececi
entristecér,	to grow melancholy	entristezco	entristececi
ennoblecér,	to ennoble	ennoblezco	ennoblececi
ensoberbecér,	to grow proud	ensoberbezco	ensoberbececi
emmudecér,	to grow dumb	emmudezco	emmudececi
Fenecér,	to finish	fenesco	feneci
fallecér,	to fail or die	fallesco	falleci
flordecér,	to flourish	florresco	florreci
fortalecér,	to strengthen	fortalezco	fortalececi
favorecér,	to favour	favorezco	favorececi
Merecér,	to deserve	meresco	merceci
Nacér,	to be born	nazco	naci
F			Obedecér,

Imperfects :

Sing.	{	viéra, viéſſe, vería	} <i>I could, I would, I should see, &c.</i>
		viéras, viéſſes, verías	
		viéra, viéſſe, vería	
Plur.	{	viéramos, viéſſemos, veríamos	
		viérais, viéſſeis, veríais	
		viéran, viéſſen, verían	

Perfect :

Sing.	{	háya	} <i>visto, I have seen, &c.</i>
		háyas	
		háya	
Plur.	{	hayámos	
		hayáis	
		háyan	

Pluperfect :

Sing.	{	hubiéra or hubiéſſe	} <i>visto, I had seen, &c.</i>
		hubiéras or hubiéſſes	
		hubiéra or hubiéſſe	
Plur.	{	hubiéramos or hubiéſſemos	
		hubiérais or hubiéſſeis	
		hubiéran or hubiéſſen	

First Future :

Sing.	{	viére	} <i>I shall or will see, &c.</i>
		viéres	
		viére	
Plur.	{	viéremos	
		viéreis	
		viéren	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	hubiére	} <i>visto, I shall have seen, &c.</i>
		hubiéres	
		hubiére	
Plur.	{	hubiéremos	
		hubiéreis	
		hubiéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Pres.	vér	<i>To see</i>
Perf.	haver visto	<i>To have seen</i>
Fut.	haver de vér	<i>To see hereafter</i>
Gerund,	viendo	<i>Seeing</i>
Part. Pass.	visto	<i>Seen.</i>

Of the Verbs ending in *cér*.

The following Verbs, whose Infinitives end in *cér*, are terminated in *sco* in the Present of the Indicative Mood,

Mood in the first Person; but all the other Persons are conjugated without adding the *s*.

The third Person Singular of the Imperative Mood ends in *sca*, the first Person Plural in *scamos*, and the third Person Plural in *scan*.

The Termination of all the Persons of the Present Subjunctive Mood is as follows:

Sing.	{ <i>sca</i> <i>scas</i> <i>sca</i>	Plur.	{ <i>scámos</i> <i>scáis</i> <i>scan</i>
-------	---	-------	--

But in all other Tenses or Moods *s* is not used before *c*, although a great many of those Verbs are derived from the *Latin*; as you may see in the following List:

Indicative.

		Present	Preterperfect.
Adolecér,	to grow sick	adolesco	adoleci
agradecér,	to thank	agradesco	agradeci
amanecér,	to rise soon	amanesco	amaneci
apetecér,	to desire	apetesco	apeteci
Compadecér,	to pity	compadesco	compadeci
conocer,	to know	conosco	conoci
crecér,	to grow	creasco	creci
Desfallecér,	to faint	desfalleasco	desfalleci
desvanecér,	to vanish	desvanesco	desvaneci
Encarecér,	to grow dearer	encareasco	encareci
establecér,	to establish	estableasco	estableci
enflaquecér,	to grow lean	enflaqueasco	enflaqueci
empobrecér,	to grow poor	empobreasco	empobreci
enriquecér,	to grow rich	enriqueasco	enriqueci
endurecér,	to grow hard	endureasco	endureci
engrandecér,	to magnify	engrandesco	engrandeci
entristecér,	to grow melancholy	entristesco	entristeci
ennoblecér,	to ennoble	ennobleasco	ennobiecí
ensoberbecér,	to grow proud	ensoberbesco	ensoberbeci
emmudecér,	to grow dumb	emmudeasco	emmudeci
Fenecér,	to finish	fenesco	feneci
fallecér,	to fail or die	falleasco	falleci
floreceér,	to flourish	floresco	florecei
fortalecér,	to strengthen	fortaleasco	fortaleci
favorecér,	to favour	favoreasco	favoreci
Merecér,	to deserve	mereasco	mereci
Nacér,	to be born	nascó	naci
		F	Obedecér,

Indicative.

		Present	Preterperfect,
Obedecér,	<i>to obey</i>	obedesco	obedeci
Pacér,	<i>to feed</i>	páscó	paci
perecér,	<i>to perish</i>	pereſco	pereci
padecér,	<i>to suffer</i>	padefco	padeci
parecér,	<i>to appear</i>	pareſco	pareci

Except from this general rule *vencér*, to conquer, which makes *venzo*, *venci*, and does not admit of the *s*, though derived from the Latin *vincere*.

Conjugation of the Verb Irregular *tenér*, To have, or to hold.

Indicative.

Present Tense:

Sing.	{	tengo	<i>I have or hold</i>
		tiénes	<i>Thou hast</i>
		tiene	<i>He has</i>
Plur.	{	tenémos	<i>We have</i>
		tenéis	<i>Ye have</i>
		tiénen	<i>They have:</i>

Imperfect:

Sing.	{	tenía	<i>I had</i>
		tenías	<i>Thou hadst</i>
		tenía	<i>He had</i>
Plur.	{	teníamos	<i>We had</i>
		teníais	<i>Ye had</i>
		tenían	<i>They had.</i>

Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	túve	<i>I had</i>
		tuviste	<i>Thou hadst</i>
		tuvo	<i>He had</i>
Plur.	{	tuvimos	<i>We had</i>
		tuvisteis	<i>Ye had</i>
		tuvieron	<i>They had:</i>

Second Perfect:

Sing.	{	he tenido	<i>I have had</i>
		has tenido	<i>Thou hast had</i>
		ha tenido, &c.	<i>He has had, &c.</i>

Preterpluperfect:

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	havía tenido	<i>I had had</i>
		havías tenido	<i>Thou hadst had</i>
		havía tenido	<i>He had had</i>
Plur.	{	havíamos tenido	<i>We had had</i>
		havíais tenido	<i>Ye had had</i>
		havían tenido	<i>They had had.</i>

First Future :

Sing.	{	tendré or tenré	<i>I shall or will have</i>
		tendrás or tenrás	<i>Thou shalt or wilt have</i>
		tendrá or tenrá	<i>He shall or will have</i>
Plur.	{	tendremos or tenrémos	<i>We shall or will have</i>
		tendréis or tenréis	<i>Ye shall or will have</i>
		tendrán or tenrán	<i>They shall or will have.</i>

Second Future :

he de tener	<i>I must have, &c.</i>
has de tener, &c.	

Third Future :

havía de tener	<i>I was to have, &c.</i>
havías de tener, &c.	

Fourth Future :

havré de tener	<i>I shall be obliged to have.</i>
----------------	------------------------------------

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	ten tu	<i>Have or hold thou</i>
		tenga el	<i>Let him have</i>
Plur.	{	tengámos nos	<i>Let us have</i>
		tened vos	<i>Have ye</i>
		tengan ellos	<i>Let them have.</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Moods.

(que)	{	ténga	} <i>I may have, &c.</i>
Sing.		téngas	
		ténga	
		tengámos	
Plur.		tengáis	
		tengan	

Preterimperfect :

Sing.	{	tuviéra, tuviéſſe, tendría	<i>I could, should, or would have, &c.</i>
		tuviéras, tuviéſſes, tendrías	
		tuviéra, tuviéſſe, tendría	
Plur.	{	tuviéramos, tuviéſſemos, tendríamos	
		tuviérais, tuviéſſeis, tendríais	
		tuviéran, tuviéſſen, tendrían	

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{ háya tenído	} <i>I have had or held, &c.</i>
	{ háyas tenído	
	{ háya tenído	
Plur.	{ hayámos tenído	
	{ hayáis tenído	
	{ háyan tenído	

First and Second Preterpluperfects :

Sing.	{ huviéra or huviéſſe	} <i>tenído, I had had, or held, &c.</i>
	{ huviéras or huviéſſes	
	{ huviéra or huviéſſe	
Plur.	{ huviéramos or huviéſſemos	
	{ huviérais or huviéſſeis	
	{ huviéran or huviéſſen	

First Future :

Sing.	{ tuviére	<i>I shall have or hold</i>
	{ tuviéres	<i>Thou shalt have</i>
	{ tuviére	<i>He shall have</i>
Plur.	{ tuviéremos	<i>We shall have</i>
	{ tuviéreis	<i>Ye shall have</i>
	{ tuviéren	<i>They shall have.</i>

Second Future :

Sing.	{ hubiére	} <i>tenído, I shall or will have or hold.</i>
	{ hubiéres	
	{ hubiére	
Plur.	{ hubiéremos	
	{ hubiéreis	
	{ hubiéren	

Infinitive Mood.

<i>Present,</i>	<i>tenér</i>	<i>To have or to hold</i>
<i>Perfect,</i>	<i>havr tenído</i>	<i>To have had or held</i>
<i>Future,</i>	<i>havr de tenér</i>	<i>To have hereafter</i>
<i>Gerund,</i>	<i>teniéndo</i>	<i>Having or holding</i>
<i>Part. Pass.</i>	<i>tenído</i>	<i>Had or held.</i>

Like this Verb are conjugated its Compounds through all Moods and Tenses ; as,

<i>mantenér,</i>	<i>to maintain</i>	<i>sostenér,</i>	<i>to sustain</i>
<i>detenér,</i>	<i>to detain</i>	<i>contenér,</i>	<i>to contain</i>
<i>retenér,</i>	<i>to retain.</i>		

Of the Verbs in gér.

The following Verbs, whose Infinitives end in *gér*, form the Present of the Indicative Mood by changing *g* into

g into j; the same change takes place in the third Person Singular, and the first and third Persons Plural of the Imperative Mood; and through all Persons, in both Numbers of the Subjunctive Mood.

Infinitive.

Indicative.

	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>
encoger, <i>to shrink</i>	encójo	encogi
recoger, <i>to gather</i>	recójo	recogi
acoger, <i>to entertain</i>	acójo	acogi
escoger, <i>to choose</i>	escójo	escogi
coger, <i>to catch</i>	cójo	cogi

Of the Irregular Verbs with an o in the penultima, or the last Syllable but one.

Conjugation of the Verb volvér, To turn.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense:

<i>Sing.</i>	{	vuélvo	<i>I turn</i>
	{	vuéives	<i>Thou turnest</i>
	{	vuélve	<i>He turns</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	volvemos	<i>We turn</i>
	{	volvéis	<i>Ye turn</i>
	{	vuélven	<i>They turn.</i>

Imperfect:

<i>Sing.</i>	{	volvía	<i>I did turn</i>
	{	volvías	<i>Thou didst turn</i>
	{	volvía	<i>He did turn</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	volvíamos	<i>We did turn</i>
	{	volvíais	<i>Ye did turn</i>
	{	volvían	<i>They did turn.</i>

First Preterperfect:

<i>Sing.</i>	{	volví	<i>I turned</i>
	{	volviste	<i>Thou turnedst</i>
	{	volvió	<i>He turned</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	volvimos	<i>We turned</i>
	{	volvisteis	<i>Ye turned</i>
	{	volvieron	<i>They turned,</i>

Second Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	he	}	vuélto, <i>I have turned, &c.</i>
		has		
		ha		
Plur.	{	hemos or havemos		
		havéis		
		han		

Preterpluperfect:

Sing.	{	havía	}	vuélto, <i>I had turned, &c.</i>
		havías		
		havía		
Plur.	{	havíamos		
		havíais		
		havián		

First Future:

Sing.	{	volveré	<i>I shall or will turn</i>
		volverás	<i>Thou shalt or wilt turn</i>
		volverá	<i>He shall or will turn</i>
Plur.	{	volveremos	<i>We shall or will turn</i>
		volveréis	<i>Ye shall or will turn.</i>
		volverán	<i>They shall or will turn.</i>

Second Future:

he de volver	<i>I must turn</i>
has de volver	<i>Thou must turn, &c.</i>

The third and fourth Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	vuélve tu	<i>Turn thou</i>
		vuélva el	<i>Let him turn</i>
Plur.	{	volvámos nos	<i>Let us turn</i>
		volvéd vos	<i>Turn ye</i>
		vuélvan ellos	<i>Let them turn.</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Moods.

Present:

(que) Sing.	{	vuélva	}	<i>I may turn, &c.</i>
		vuélvas		
		vuélva		
Plur.	{	volvámos		
		volváis		
		vuelvan		

Imperfects:

Imperfects :

Sing.	{	volviéra, volviéſſe, volvería	} <i>I could,</i> <i>ſhould,</i> <i>or would</i> <i>turn, &c.</i>
		volviéras, volviéſſes, volverías	
		volviéra, volviéſſe, volvería	
Plur.	{	volvieramos, volviéſſemos, volveríamos	
		volviérais, volviéſſeis, volveríais	
		volviéran, volviéſſen, volverían	

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	háya	} <i>vuélto, I have turned, &c.</i>
		háyas	
		háya	
Plur.	{	hayámos	
		hayáis	
		háyan	

Two Preterpluperfects :

Sing.	{	hubiéra or hubiéſſe	} <i>vuélto, I had turned,</i> <i>&c.</i>
		hubiéras or hubiéſſes	
		hubiéra or hubiéſſe	
Plur.	{	hubiéramos or hubiéſſemos	
		hubierais or hubiéſſeis	
		hubiéran or hubiéſſen	

First Future :

Sing.	{	volviére	} <i>I ſhall or will turn, &c.</i>
		volviéres	
		volviére	
Plur.	{	volviéremos	
		volviéreis	
		volviéren	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	hubiére	} <i>vuélto, I ſhall or will have turned, &c.</i>
		hubiéres	
		hubiére	
Plur.	{	hubiéremos	
		hubiéreis	
		hubiéren	

Infinitive Mood.

<i>Preſent,</i>	<i>volver</i>	<i>To turn</i>
<i>Perſect,</i>	<i>haver vuélto</i>	<i>To have turned</i>
<i>Future,</i>	<i>haver de volver</i>	<i>To turn hereafter</i>
<i>Gerund,</i>	<i>volviendo</i>	<i>Turning</i>
<i>Part. Paſſ.</i>	<i>vuélto</i>	<i>Turned.</i>

The following Verbs are conjugated in the ſame manner as the Verb *volver*, by changing the *o* of the penultima,

penultima, or last syllable but one, into *ue* in the three Persons Singular, and third Plural, of the Present Indicative, Imperative, and Subjunctive Moods.

		<i>Indicative.</i>	<i>Subjunctive.</i>
		<i>Present.</i>	<i>Present.</i>
usar,	<i>to use</i>	uso	use
cozer,	<i>to boil</i>	cuezo	cueza
doler,	<i>to grieve</i>	duelo	duela
oler,	<i>to smell</i>	huelo	huela

Observe, that the following are varied thus :

		<i>Indicative.</i>	<i>Subjunctive.</i>
		<i>Present.</i>	<i>Present.</i>
caer,	<i>to fall</i>	caigo	caiga
roer,	<i>to grow</i>	roigo	roiga
valer,	<i>to be worth</i>	válgo	válga

In the following Verbs an *i* is introduced before the *e* of the last syllable but one, in the three Persons Singular, and third Plural of the Present Indicative, Imperative, and Subjunctive Moods :

		<i>Indicative.</i>	<i>Subjunctive.</i>
		<i>Present.</i>	<i>Present.</i>
defender,	<i>to defend</i>	defiendo	defienda
hender,	<i>to cleave</i>	hiendo	hienda
cerner,	<i>to sift</i>	cierno	cierna
entender,	<i>to understand</i>	entiendo	entienda
hedér,	<i>to stink</i>	hiédo	hiéda
perder,	<i>to lose</i>	piérdo	piérda

Of Verbs Passive of the Second Conjugation.

The Verbs Passive are formed in the same manner as one of the first Conjugation, with one of the Auxiliaries *ser* or *estar*, and the Participle Passive of the Verb conjugated ; thus :

		<i>Indicative.</i>
		<i>Present :</i>
Sing.	{	soy querido <i>I am loved</i>
	{	eres querido <i>Thou art loved</i>
	{	es querido <i>He is loved</i>
Plur.	{	somos queridos <i>We are loved</i>
	{	sois queridos <i>You are loved</i>
	{	son queridos <i>They are loved.</i>
		<i>Preterimperfect :</i>

Preterimperfect :

Sing.	{	éera querido	<i>I was loved</i>
		éras querido	<i>Thou wast loved</i>
		éera querido	<i>He was loved</i>
Plur.	{	erámos queridos	<i>We were loved</i>
		eráis queridos	<i>Ye were loved</i>
		éran queridos	<i>They were loved.</i>

Pluperfect :

Sing.	{	fui or he sido querido	} <i>I have been loved, &c.</i>
		fuiste or has sido querido	
		fue or ha sido querido, &c.	

And so in the other Tenses and Moods.

Of Verbs Reciprocal.

These Verbs are conjugated as those of the first Conjugation ; as,

Ofender se, To offend one's self.

Indicative.

Present :

Sing.	{	me ofendo	} <i>I offend myself</i>
		te ofendes	
		se ofende	
Plur.	{	nos ofendémos	} <i>Thou, &c.</i>
		vos ofendéis	
		se ofenden	

Imperfect :

Sing.	{	me ofendía	} <i>I did offend myself, &c.</i>
		te ofendías	
		se ofendía	
Plur.	{	nos ofendíamos	}
		vos ofendíais	
		se ofendían	

Perfect :

Sing.	{	me ofendí	} <i>I offended myself, &c.</i>
		te ofendíste	
		se ofendió	
Plur.	{	nos ofendímos	}
		vos ofendísteis	
		se ofendieron	

Imperative :

Imperative.

Sing.	{	ofende te	Offend thou thyself
		ofenda se	Let him offend himself
Plur.	{	ofendámos nos	Let us offend ourselves
		ofendéd vos	Offend ye yourselves
		oféndan se	Let them offend themselves.

Observe, That the Persons may be doubled; as, *yo me ofendo, tu te ofendes*: or thus, *oféndome, ofendéste, ofende se*, &c. by putting the Pronoun after the Verb.

Of Verbs Impersonal.

The Impersonals of this Conjugation are,

Havér, *To be there.*

Indicative.

Present Tense:

hay or no hay *There is, or there is not, or there are.*

Imperfect:

havía *There was, or there were.*

First Preterperfect:

húvo *There was, or there has been.*

Second Perfect:

há havído *There has been.*

Pluperfect:

havía havído *There had been.*

Future:

havrá *There will or shall be.*

Second Future:

há de havér *There must be.*

And so of the other Futures.

Imperative.

háya *Let it be.*

Optative.

oxalá que háya *God grant that there be.*

Imperfects :

que huviéra, huviéſſe, or havría *That there could, would, or
should be.*

Perfect :

que háya havído *That there has been.*

Pluperfect :

que huviéra huvído *That there had been.*

Future :

que huviére *That there shall be.*

Obſerve, That the *Spaniſh* Language expreſſes the Imperſonal Verbs as the *Latin*; but in *Engliſh* they are obliged to add *there* or *it*; and in *French* they uſe the pronoun *il*, &c.

EXAMPLES.

Hay mucha gente en Lóndres, there are a great many people in London; *havía tres cientos ſoldados en el caſtillo*, there were three hundred ſoldiers in the caſtle; *hubo muchas mugéres en la igleſia*, there were many women in the church.

Sér, To be, in what concerns the eſſence or qualities of things.

Indicative.

<i>Preſent,</i>	es, nos es	<i>It is, it is not</i>
<i>Imperfect,</i>	éra	<i>It was</i>
<i>Perfect,</i>	fué	<i>It has been.</i>

And ſo in the other Tenſes.

EXAMPLES.

Es tiempo de levantár, it is time to get up; *era tiempo de ir*, it was time to go; *fué noche*, it has been night; *será verdad*, it will be true.

So

So the Verb *ser* is conjugated with *menéster* ; as,

Es menéster hacér esto, this must be done ; *era menéster escribér*, It was necessary to write ; *yo iría si fuéra menéster*, I would go, if it were necessary.

The Verb Impersonal placér, To please.

Indicative Mood.

<i>Present,</i>	place	<i>It pleases</i>
<i>Imperfect,</i>	placía	<i>It did please</i>
<i>First Perfect,</i>	plúgo	<i>It pleased</i>
<i>Second Perfect,</i>	ha placído	<i>It has pleased.</i>

Imperative.

Plega *Let it please, &c.*

Llover, To rain.

Lluéve	<i>It rains</i>
Llovía	<i>It did rain</i>
Llovió	<i>It rained</i>
Ha llovído	<i>It has rained</i>
Lloverá	<i>It shall or will rain.</i>

Imperative.

Lluéva *Let it rain.*

Heder, To stink.

Hiéde,	<i>It stinks</i>
Hedía	<i>It did stink</i>
Hedió	<i>It stunk, &c.</i>

Olér, To smell.

This Verb, as well as *llover*, changes the *o* into *u* in the Present Tenses.

Huéle	<i>It smells</i>
Holía	<i>It did smell</i>
Huéla	<i>Let it smell</i>
Que huéla	<i>That it may smell.</i>

Acontecér, acaecér, To happen.

Acontéce, acaéce, *It happens, &c.*

Pertenécer, To belong.

Pertenéce *It belongs, &c.*

The Reciprocal or Passive Impersonals are conjugated as the Verb *leérse*, *To be read*.

Se lee or léese	<i>It is read</i>
Se leía	<i>It was read</i>
Se leió	<i>It has been read.</i>

And so are conjugated *sabérse*, *To be known*.

Se sabe, or sabe se	<i>It is known</i>
Se sabía, or sabía se	<i>It was known</i>
Se supo, or supo se	<i>It has been known</i>
Se sabrá, or sabrá se	<i>It will be known.</i>

Imperative.

Sépa se	<i>Let it be known.</i>
---------	-------------------------

Hacer se, *To be made*.

Se hace	<i>It is made</i>
Se hacía	<i>It was made</i>
Se hizo	<i>It has been made.</i>

Observe, That all the Verbs, Regular and Irregular, of the second Conjugation, are, as well as those of the first, conjugated in *Spanish* as in *English*, with the Auxiliary Verb *estar*, *To be*, and the Gerund of the Verb ; as,

Indicative.

Present Tense:

Sing.	{	estoy leyendo	<i>I am reading</i>
	{	estás leyendo	<i>Thou art reading</i>
	{	está leyendo	<i>He is reading</i>
Plur.	{	estamos leyendo	<i>We are reading</i>
	{	estáis leyendo	<i>Ye are reading</i>
	{	están leyendo	<i>They are reading.</i>

And so in all Moods and Tenses, and likewise in the Impersonals ; as,

Está lloviendo	<i>It rains</i>
Estaba lloviendo	<i>It did rain.</i>
Estuvo lloviendo	<i>It has rained, or it was raining</i>
Ha estado lloviendo	<i>It has been raining</i>
Havía estado lloviendo	<i>It had been raining</i>
Estará lloviendo	<i>It will be raining.</i>

And so in all the Tenses.

*Of Verbs Regular of the third Conjugation in ír; as,
Sufrír, To suffer.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	sufro	<i>I suffer</i>
		sufres	<i>Thou sufferest</i>
		sufre	<i>He suffers</i>
Plur.	{	sufrimos	<i>We suffer</i>
		sufáis	<i>Ye suffer</i>
		sufren	<i>They suffer.</i>

Preterimperfect :

Sing.	{	sufría	<i>I was suffering, or I did suffer, &c.</i>
		sufrias	
		sufria	
Plur.	{	sufríamos	
		sufraís	
		sufrían	

First Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	sufí	<i>I suffered, &c.</i>
		sufístes	
		sufió	
Plur.	{	sufrimos	
		sufísteis	
		sufrieron	

Second and Third Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	he or hube	<i>sufrido, I have suffered, &c.</i>
		has	
		ha	
Plur.	{	hemos	
		havéis	
		han	

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	havía	<i>sufrido, I had suffered.</i>
		havías	
		havía	
Plur.	{	havíamos	
		havíais	
		havían	

First Future :

Sing.	{	sufiré	<i>I shall or will suffer, &c.</i>
		sufirás	
		sufirá	
Plur.	{	sufirémos	
		sufiréis	
		sufirán	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	he de sufrir	} <i>I am to or I must suffer.</i>
	{	has de sufrir	
	{	ha de sufrir	
Plur.	{	hemos de sufrir	
	{	havéis de sufrir	
	{	han de sufrir	

The third and fourth as in the other Conjugations.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	sufre tu	<i>Suffer thou</i>
	{	sufra el	<i>Let him suffer</i>
Plur.	{	sufrámos nos	<i>Let us suffer</i>
	{	sufrid vos	<i>Suffer ye</i>
	{	sufrán ellos	<i>Let them suffer.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present Tense :

(que)	Sing.	{	sufra	}	<i>I may suffer, &c</i>
			sufras		
			sufra		
Plur.	{	sufrámos			
		sufráis			
		sufrán			

Three Imperfects :

Sing.	{	sufriera, sufriésse, sufriría	} <i>I might, should, or would suffer, &c.</i>
	{	sufrieras, sufriésseis, sufrirías	
	{	sufriera, sufriésse, sufriría	
Plur.	{	sufriéramos, sufriésemos, sufriríamos	
	{	sufrierais, sufriésseis, sufriríais	
	{	sufrieran, sufriessen, sufrirían	

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	haya	} <i>sufrido, I have suffered, &c.</i>
	{	hayas	
	{	haya	
Plur.	{	hayámos	
	{	hayáis	
	{	hayan	

First and Second Preterpluperfects :

Sing.	{	hubiera or huviésse	} <i>hubido</i> { <i>I had suffered, or I should have suffered, &c.</i>
	{	hubieras or huviésseis	
	{	hubiera or huviésse	
Plur.	{	hubiéramos or huviésemos	
	{	hubierais or huviésseis	
	{	hubieran or huviessen	

First Future :

Sing.	{	sufriére	} <i>I shall or will suffer, &c.</i>
		sufriéres	
		sufriére	
Plur.	{	sufriéremos	
		sufriéreis	
		sufriéren	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	huviére	} <i>sufrido, I shall or will have suffered, &c.</i>
		huviéres	
		huviére	
Plur.	{	huviéremos	
		huviéreis	
		huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	sufrir	<i>To suffer</i>
Preterperf.	haver sufrido	<i>To have suffered</i>
Future,	haver de sufrir	<i>To suffer hereafter</i>
Gerund,	sufriendo	<i>Suffering</i>
Part. Pass.	sufrido	<i>Suffered.</i>

Observe, That all the other regular Verbs of the third Conjugation are conjugated in the same manner as the above Verb *sufrir* ; such as, *subir*, to go up ; *aburrir*, to molest ; *acudir*, to come, to apply, &c.

The Participle Passive of the following Verbs is irregular ; viz. *escribir*, to write ; *escrito*, written ; *abrir*, to open ; *abierto*, opened ; *cubrir*, to cover ; *cubierto*, covered ; *descubrir*, to discover ; *descubierto*, discovered ; *encubrir*, to conceal ; *encubierto*, concealed, &c.

The Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation in ir ; are,
Venir, To come.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	vengo	<i>I come</i>
		viénes	<i>Thou comest</i>
		viéne	<i>He comes</i>
Plur.	{	venimos	<i>We come</i>
		venís	<i>Ye come</i>
		viénen	<i>They come.</i>

Preter-

Preterimperfect :

Sing.	{	venía	<i>I did come</i>
	{	venías	<i>Thou didst come</i>
	{	venía	<i>He did come, &c.</i>
Plur.	{	veníamos	
	{	veníais	
	{	venían	

First Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	vine	<i>I came</i>
	{	veniste	<i>Thou camest</i>
	{	vino	<i>He came</i>
Plur.	{	venimos	<i>We came</i>
	{	venisteis	<i>Ye came</i>
	{	vinieron	<i>They came.</i>

Second and Third Perfects :

Sing.	{	he or hube	} <i>venido, I have come, &c.</i>
	{	has	
	{	ha	
Plur.	{	hemos	
	{	haveis	
	{	han	

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	havía	} <i>venido, I had come, &c.</i>
	{	havías	
	{	havía	
Plur.	{	havíamos	
	{	havíais	
	{	havían	

First Future :

Sing.	{	vendré	} <i>I shall or will come, &c.</i>
	{	vendrás	
	{	vendrá	
Plur.	{	vendremos	
	{	vendréis	
	{	vendrán	

Observe, That formerly they used to say likewise *vérne*, in this first Future; but it is only found in old books now.

Second Future:

Sing.	{	hé de venir	} <i>I must come, &c.</i>
	{	has de venir	
	{	há de venir	
Plur.	{	hemos de venir	
	{	havéis de venir	
	{	han de venir	

The third and fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	ven tu	<i>Come thou</i>
	{	venga el	<i>Let him come</i>
Plur.	{	vengámos nos	<i>Let us come</i>
	{	veníd vos	<i>Come ye</i>
	{	vengan ellos	<i>Let them come.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present Tense:

(que)	Sing.	{	venga	}	<i>I may come, &c.</i>
			vengas		
			venga		
Plur.	{	vengámos	}		
		vengáis			
		vengan			

Three Imperfects.

Sing.	{	viniera, viniéſſe, vendría	} <i>I might, could, should, or would come, &c.</i>
	{	vinieras, viniéſſes, vendrías	
	{	viniera, viniéſſe, vendría	
Plur.	{	vinieramos, viniéſſemos, vendríamos	
	{	vinierais, viniéſſeis, vendrías	
	{	vinieran, viniéſſen, vendrían	

Anciently they used to say likewise in the third Imperfect *venía*, but now it is quite obsolete.

Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	háya	} <i>venido, I have come, &c.</i>
	{	hayas	
	{	háya	
Plur.	{	hayámos	
	{	hayáis	
	{	háyan	

First and Second Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	huviéra or huviéſſe	}	venído	{	<i>I had come, or I should have come, &c.</i>
		huviéras or huviéſſes				
		huviéra or huviéſſe				
Plur.	{	huviéramos or huviéſſemos				
		huviérais or huviéſſeis				
		huviéran or huviéſſen				

First Future :

Sing.	{	viniére	}	<i>I shall or will come, &c.</i>
		viniéres		
		viniére		
Plur.	{	viniéremos		
		viniéreis		
		viniéren		

Second Future :

Sing.	{	huviére	}	venído, <i>I shall have come, &c.</i>
		huviéres		
		huviére		
Plur.	{	huviéremos		
		huviéreis		
		huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	venír	<i>To come</i>
Perfect,	haver venído	<i>To have come</i>
Future,	haver de venír	<i>To come hereafter</i>
Gerund,	viniéndo	<i>Coming</i>
Part. Pass.	venído	<i>Come.</i>

The compounds of this Verb *venír* are declined in every respect, in all Moods and Tenses, as their primitive; as, *revenír*, to return; *convenír*, to agree; *sobrevenír*, to arrive; *devenír*, to become, which make *revéngo*, *convéngo*, *sobrevéngo*, *devéngo*, in the Present of the Indicative Mood, &c.

The Irregular Verb *decír*, *To say*.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	digo	<i>I say</i>
		dices	<i>Thou sayest</i>
		dice	<i>He says</i>
Plur.	{	decimos	<i>We say</i>
		decís	<i>Ye say</i>
		dícen	<i>They say.</i>

Preterimperfect:

Sing.	{	decía	} <i>I did say, &c.</i>
		decías	
		decía	
Plur.	{	decíamos	
		decíais	
		decían	

First Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	díxe	<i>I said</i>
		dixíste	<i>Thou saidst</i>
		díxo	<i>He said</i>
Plur.	{	dixímos	<i>We said</i>
		dixísteis	<i>Ye said</i>
		dixéron	<i>They said.</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects:

Sing.	{	he or hube dicho	<i>I have said</i>
		has dicho	<i>Thou hast said</i>
		ha dicho	<i>He has said</i>
Plur.	{	hemos dicho	<i>We have said</i>
		havéis dicho	<i>Ye have said</i>
		han dicho	<i>They have said.</i>

Preterpluperfect:

Sing.	{	havía	} dicho, <i>I had said, &c.</i>
		havías	
		havía	
Plur.	{	havíamos	
		havíais	
		havían	

First Future:

Sing.	{	diré	<i>I shall or will say</i>
		dirás	<i>Thou shalt or wilt say</i>
		dirá	<i>He shall or will say</i>
Plur.	{	dirémos	<i>We shall or will say</i>
		diréis	<i>Ye shall or will say</i>
		díran	<i>They shall or will say.</i>

Second Future:

Sing.	{	hé de decír	} <i>I am to say, or I must say, &c.</i>
		has de decír	
		ha de decír	
Plur.	{	hemos de decír	
		havéis de decír	
		han de decír	

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	dí tu	Say thou
	{	diga el	Let him say
Plur.	{	digámos nos	Let us say
	{	decíd vos	Say ye
	{	digan ellos	Let them say.

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present Tense :

(que)	Sing.	{	diga	} <i>I may say, &c.</i>
		{	digas	
		{	diga	
Plur.	{	digámos		
		digáis		
		digan		

Preterimperfect :

Sing.	{	dixéra, dixéſſe, diría	} I might, could, would, or should say, &c.
	{	dixéras, dixéſſes, dirías	
	{	dixéra, dixéſſe, diría	
Plur.	{	dixéramos, dixéſſemos, diríamos	
	{	dixérais, dixéſſeis, diríais	
	{	dixéran, dixéſſen, dirían	

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	háya	} dicho, I have said, &c.
	{	háyas	
	{	háya	
Plur.	{	hayámos	
	{	hayáis	
	{	háyan	

The two Preterpluperfects :

Sing.	{	huviéra or huviéſſe	} dicho { I had said, or should have said, &c.
	{	huviéras or huviéſſes	
	{	huviéra or huviéſſe	
Plur.	{	huviéramos or huviéſſemos	
	{	huviérais or huviéſſeis	
	{	huviéran or huviéſſen	

First Future :

Sing.	{	dixére	} I shall or will say, &c.
	{	dixéres	
	{	dixére	
Plur.	{	dixéremos	
	{	dixéreis	
	{	dixéren	

Second Future:

Sing.	{ huviére	} dicho, <i>I shall have said, &c.</i>
	{ huviéres	
	{ huviére	
Plur.	{ huviéremos	
	{ huviéreis	
	{ huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	decír	<i>To say</i>
Perfekt,	havér dicho	<i>To have said</i>
Future,	havér de decír	<i>To have to say, to say hereafter</i>
Gerund,	diciendo	<i>Saying</i>
Part. Pass.	dicho	<i>Said.</i>

Observe, That the compounds *desdecír*, to unsay, and *contradecír*, to contradict, are in all points conjugated like *decír*; but *bendecír*, to bless, and *maldecír*, to curse, make in the Participle Passive *bendíto*, blessed, and *maldíto*, cursed. Formerly they said *bendecído* and *maldecído*, but it is now quite out of use, and only said by country people, &c.

The Irregular Verb *ír*, To go.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense:

Sing.	{ vói	<i>I go</i>
	{ vás	<i>Thou goest</i>
	{ vá	<i>He goes</i>
Plur.	{ vámos	<i>We go</i>
	{ váis	<i>Ye go</i>
	{ ván	<i>They go.</i>

Preterimperfect:

Sing.	{ íba	} <i>I did go, &c.</i>
	{ íbas	
	{ íba	
Plur.	{ íbamos	
	{ íbais	
	{ íban	

First Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	fui	<i>I went</i>
		fuiste	<i>Thou wentest</i>
		fué	<i>He went</i>
Plur.	{	fuimos	<i>We went</i>
		fuisteis	<i>Ye went</i>
		fuéron	<i>They went.</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects :

Sing.	{	hé or hube	} <i>ido, I have gone, &c.</i>
		has	
		ha	
Plur.	{	hemos	
		haveis	
		han	

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	había	} <i>ido, I had gone, &c.</i>
		habías	
		había	
Plur.	{	habíamos	
		habíais	
		habían	

First Future :

Sing.	{	iré	} <i>I shall or will go, &c.</i>
		irás	
		irá	
Plur.	{	iremos	
		iréis	
		irán	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	he de ir	} <i>I am to go, or I must go.</i>
		has de ir	
		ha de ir	
Plur.	{	hemos de ir	
		haveis de ir	
		han de ir	

The other two Futures as in the first Conjugation.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	vé tu	<i>Go thou</i>
		vaya el	<i>Let him go.</i>
Plur.	{	vayámonos nos	<i>Let us go</i>
		id vos	<i>Go ye</i>
		vayan ellos	<i>Let them go.</i>

The ELEMENTS of Subjunctive and Optative Moods :

Present Tense :

<i>Sing.</i>	{	váya	}	<i>I may go, &c.</i>
		váyas		
		váya		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	vayámos		
		vayáis		
		váyan		

Preterimperfects :

<i>Sing.</i>	{	fuéra, fuéſſe, iría	}	<i>I could, should, or would go, &c.</i>
		fuéras, fuéſſes, irías		
		fuéra, fuéſſe, iría		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	fuéramos, fuéſſemos, iríamos		
		fuérais, fuéſſeis, iríais		
		fuéran, fuéſſen, irían		

Preterperfect :

<i>Sing.</i>	{	háya	}	<i>ído, I have gone, &c.</i>
		háyas		
		háya		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	hayámos		
		hayáis		
		háyan		

Preterpluperfects :

<i>Sing.</i>	{	huviéra or huviéſſe	}	<i>ído, I had gone, or I should have gone, &c.</i>
		huviéras or huviéſſes		
		huviéra or huviéſſe		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	huviéramos or huviéſſemos		
		huviérais or huviéſſeis		
		huviéran or huviéſſen		

First Future :

<i>Sing.</i>	{	fuére	}	<i>I shall or will go, &c.</i>
		fuéres		
		fuére		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	fuéremos		
		fuéreis		
		fuéren		

Second Future :

<i>Sing.</i>	{	huviére	}	<i>ído, I shall have gone, &c.</i>
		huviéres		
		huviére		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	huviéremos		
		huviéreis		
		huviéren		

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

<i>Present,</i>	<i>ir</i>	<i>To go</i>
<i>Perfect,</i>	<i>haber ido</i>	<i>To have gone</i>
<i>Future,</i>	<i>haber de ir</i>	<i>To go hereafter</i>
<i>Gerund,</i>	<i>yendo</i>	<i>Going</i>
<i>Part. Pass.</i>	<i>ido</i>	<i>Gone.</i>

The Irregular Verb oír, To hear.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>oigo</i>	<i>I hear</i>
	<i>oyes</i>	<i>Thou hearest</i>
	<i>oye</i>	<i>He hears</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>oímos</i>	<i>We hear</i>
	<i>oís</i>	<i>Ye hear</i>
	<i>óyen</i>	<i>They hear.</i>

Preterimperfect :

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>oía</i>	} <i>I did hear, &c.</i>
	<i>oías</i>	
	<i>oía</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>oíamos</i>	
	<i>oíais</i>	
	<i>oían</i>	

First Preterperfect :

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>oí</i>	<i>I heard</i>
	<i>oíste</i>	<i>Thou heardest</i>
	<i>oyó</i>	<i>He heard</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>oímos</i>	<i>We heard</i>
	<i>oísteis</i>	<i>Ye heard</i>
	<i>oyéron</i>	<i>They heard.</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects :

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>he or hube</i>	} <i>oído, I have heard, &c.</i>
	<i>has</i>	
	<i>ha</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>hemos</i>	
	<i>havéis</i>	
	<i>han</i>	

Preterpluperfect :

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>havía</i>	} <i>oído, I had heard, &c.</i>
	<i>havías</i>	
	<i>havía</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>havíamos</i>	
	<i>havíais</i>	
	<i>havían</i>	

First Future :

Sing.	{	oír	}	<i>I shall or will hear, &c.</i>
		oírás		
		oír		
Plur.	{	oírém		
		oíréis		
		oírán		

Second Future :

Sing.	{	hé de oír	}	<i>I must hear, &c.</i>
		has de oír		
		ha de oír		
Plur.	{	hém		
		havéis de oír		
		han de oír		

The third and fourth as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	oye tu	<i>Hear thou</i>
		oíga el	<i>Let him hear</i>
Plur.	{	oigámo	<i>Let us hear</i>
		oíd vo	<i>Hear ye</i>
		oígan ellos	<i>Let them hear.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present Tense :

(que) Sing.	{	oíga	}	<i>I may hear, &c.</i>
		oígas		
		oíga		
Plur.	{	oigámo		
		oigáis		
		oígan		

Three Preterimperfects :

Sing.	{	oyéra, oyéſſe, oíría	}	<i>I might, could, should, or would hear, &c.</i>
		oyéras, oyéſſes, oírías		
		oyéra, oyéſſe, oíría		
Plur.	{	oyéramo, oyéſſ mo, oíríamo		
		oyérais, oyéſſeis, oíríais		
		oyéran, oyéſſen, oírían		

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	háya	}	<i>oído, I have heard, &c.</i>
		háyas		
		háya		
Plur.	{	hayámo		
		hayáis		
		háyan		

Preterpluperfects:

Preterpluperfects :

Sing.	{	huviéra or huviéſſe	} oído, <i>I had heard, or I have heard, &c.</i>
		huviéras or huviéſſes	
		huviéra or huviéſſe	
Plur.	{	huviéramos or huviéſſemos	
		huviérais or huviéſſeis	
		huviéran or huviéſſen	

First Future :

Sing.	{	oyére	} <i>I shall or will hear, &c.</i>
		oyéres	
		oyére	
Plur.	{	oyéremos	
		oyéreis	
		oyéren	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	huviére	} oído, <i>I shall have heard, &c.</i>
		huviéres	
		huviére	
Plur.	{	huviéremos	
		huviéreis	
		huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	oír	<i>To hear</i>
Perfect,	haver oído	<i>To have heard</i>
Future,	haver de oír	<i>To hear hereafter</i>
Gerund,	oyéndo	<i>Hearing</i>
Part. Active,	oyénte	<i>He who is hearing</i>
Part. Pass.	oído	<i>Heard.</i>

The Irregular Verb herir, *To wound, to strike, or to hurt.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense:

Sing.	{	hiéro	<i>I wound</i>
		hiéres	<i>Thou woundest</i>
		hiére	<i>He wounds</i>
Plur.	{	herímos	<i>We wound</i>
		héris	<i>Ye wound</i>
		hiéren	<i>They wound.</i>

Imperfect:

Sing.	{	hería	} <i>I did wound, &c.</i>
		herías	
		hería	
Plur.	{	heríamos	
		heríais	
		herían	

First Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	herí	} <i>I wounded, &c.</i>
		heríste	
		hirío	
Plur.	{	herímos	
		herísteis	
		hiréron	

Second Preterperfect:

he herído *I have wounded, &c.*
 has herído, &c.

Preterpluperfect:

havía herído, &c. *I had wounded, &c.*

First Future:

Sing.	{	heriré	} <i>I shall or will wound, &c.</i>
		herirás	
		herirá	
Plur.	{	herirémos	
		heriréis	
		herirán	

Second Future:

he de herir, &c. *I must wound, &c.*

The third and fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	hiére tu	<i>Wound thou</i>
		hiéra el	<i>Let him wound</i>
Plur.	{	hirámos nosotros	<i>Let us wound</i>
		heríd vosotros	<i>Wound ye</i>
		hiéran ellos	<i>Let them wound.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present:

(que) Sing.	{	hiéra	} <i>I may wound, &c.</i>
		hiéras	
		hiéra	
Plur.	{	hirámos	
		hiráis	
		hiéran	

Sing.	{	hirióra, hirióste, heriría	} <i>I could, should, or would wound, &c.</i>
		hirióras, hirióstes, herirías	
		hirióra, hirióste, heriría	
Plur.	{	hirióramos, hiriósemos, heriríamos	
		hiriórais, hirióseis, heriríais	
		hirióran, hirióssen, herirían	

Preterperfect

Preterperfect:

háya herído, &c. *I have wounded, &c.*

Preterpluperfects:

hubiera or hubiése herído, &c. *I had or should have wounded, &c.*

Future.

Sing.	{	heriré	} <i>I shall or will wound, &c.</i>
		herirés	
		herirá	
Plur.	{	heriremos	
		heriréis	
		herirén	

Second Future.

hubiere herído, &c. *I shall have wounded, &c.*

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	herir	<i>To wound</i>
Perfect,	haber herído	<i>To have wounded</i>
Future,	haber de herir	<i>To wound hereafter</i>
Gerund,	heriendo	<i>Wounding</i>
Part. Pass.	herído	<i>Wounded.</i>

The Irregular Verb dormir, To sleep.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	duermo	<i>I sleep</i>
		duermes	<i>Thou sleepest</i>
		duerme	<i>He sleeps</i>
Plur.	{	dormimos	<i>We sleep</i>
		dormís	<i>Ye sleep</i>
		duermen	<i>They sleep.</i>

Preterimperfect:

Sing.	{	dormía	<i>I did sleep</i>
		dormías	<i>Thou didst sleep</i>
		dormía	<i>He did sleep</i>
Plur.	{	dormíamos	<i>We did sleep</i>
		dormíais	<i>Ye did sleep</i>
		dormían	<i>They did sleep.</i>

First Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	dormí	<i>I slept</i>
		dormíste	<i>Thou slepest</i>
		dormió	<i>He slept</i>
Plur.	{	dormimos	<i>We slept</i>
		dormísteis	<i>Ye slept</i>
		durmiéron	<i>They slept</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects :

Sing.	{	hé or húve	} dormído, <i>I have slept, &c.</i>
	{	hás	
	{	há	
Plur.	{	hémos	
	{	havéis	
	{	han	

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	havía	} dormído, <i>I had slept, &c.</i>
	{	havías	
	{	havía	
Plur.	{	havíamos	
	{	havíais	
	{	havían	

First Future :

Sing.	{	dormiré	} <i>I shall or will sleep, &c.</i>
	{	dormirás	
	{	dormirá	
Plur.	{	dormiremos	
	{	dormiréis	
	{	dormirán	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	hé de dormir	} <i>I am to sleep, or I must sleep, &c.</i>
	{	has de dormir	
	{	ha de dormir	
Plur.	{	hémos de dormir	
	{	havéis de dormir	
	{	han de dormir	

The other Futures as in the other Verbs:

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	duérme tu	<i>Sleep thou</i>
	{	duérma el	<i>Let him sleep</i>
Plur.	{	durmámos nosótro	<i>Let us sleep</i>
	{	dormíd vosótro	<i>Sleep ye</i>
	{	duérman ellos	<i>Let them sleep.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	duérma	} <i>I may sleep, &c.</i>
	{	duérmas	
	{	duérma	
Plur.	{	durmámos	
	{	durmáis	
	{	duérman	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	durmiéra, durmiése, dormiría	} <i>I might, could, would, or should sleep, &c.</i>
	{	durmiéras, durmiéses, dormirías	
	{	durmiéra, durmiése, dormiría	
Plur.	{	durmiéramos, durmiésemos, dormiríamos	
	{	durmiérais, durmiéseis, dormiríais	
	{	durmiéran, durmiésen, dormirían	

First Future :

Sing.	{	háya	} <i>dormido, I have slept, &c.</i>
	{	háyas	
	{	háya	
Plur.	{	hayámos	
	{	hayáis	
	{	háyan	

Two Preterpluperfects :

Sing.	{	huviera or huviése	} <i>dormido</i>	} <i>I had slept, or I could or should have slept, &c.</i>
	{	huvieras or huviéses		
	{	huviera or huviése		
Plur.	{	huvieramos or huviésemos		
	{	huvierais or huviéseis		
	{	huvieran or huviésen		

First Future :

Sing.	{	durmiere	} <i>I shall or will sleep, &c.</i>
	{	durmiéres	
	{	durmiere	
Plur.	{	durmiéremos	
	{	durmiéreis	
	{	durmiéren	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	huviere	} <i>dormido, I shall or will have slept, &c.</i>
	{	huvieres	
	{	huviere	
Plur.	{	huvieremos	
	{	huvieréis	
	{	huvieren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	dormir	<i>To sleep</i>
Perfect,	haber dormido	<i>To have slept</i>
Future,	ha-er de dormir	<i>To sleep hereafter</i>
Gerund,	durmiendo	<i>Sleeping</i>
Part. Active,	dormiente	<i>Sleeper</i>
Part. Passive,	dormido	<i>Slept.</i>

The

The **ELEMENTS** *of*
The Irregular Verb morir, To die.
 The Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	muéro	<i>I die</i>
		muéres	<i>Thou diest</i>
		muére	<i>He dies</i>
Plur.	{	morímos	<i>We die</i>
		morís	<i>Ye die</i>
		muéren	<i>They die.</i>

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	moría	<i>I did die</i>
		morías	<i>Thou didst die</i>
		moría	<i>He did die</i>
Plur.	{	moríamos	<i>We did die</i>
		moríais	<i>Ye did die</i>
		morían	<i>They did die.</i>

First Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	morí	<i>I died</i>
		moríste	<i>Thou diedst</i>
		murío	<i>He died</i>
Plur.	{	morímos	<i>We died</i>
		morístes	<i>Ye died</i>
		muriéron	<i>They died.</i>

Second Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	sói muérto	<i>I am dead</i>
		éres muérto	<i>Thou art dead</i>
		és muérto	<i>He is dead</i>
Plur.	{	sómos muértos	<i>We are dead</i>
		sóis muértos	<i>Ye are dead</i>
		son muértos	<i>They are dead.</i>

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	éra muérto	<i>I was dead</i>
		éras muérto	<i>Thou wast dead</i>
		éra muérto	<i>He was dead</i>
Plur.	{	éramos muértos	<i>We were dead</i>
		érais muértos	<i>Ye were dead</i>
		éran muértos	<i>They were dead.</i>

First Future :

Sing.	{	moriré	<i>I shall or will die, &c.</i>
		morirás	
		morirá	
Plur.	{	morirémos	
		moriréis	
		morirán	

Second Future :

Sing.	{	hé de morir	} <i>I must die, &c.</i>
		hás de morir	
		ha de morir	
Plur.	{	hemos de morir	
		havéis de morir	
		han de morir	

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	muére tu	<i>Die thou</i>
		muéra el	<i>Let him die</i>
Plur.	{	murámos nosótro	<i>Let us die</i>
		morid vosótro	<i>Die ye</i>
		muéran ellos	<i>Let them die.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present Tense :

(que) Sing.	{	muéra	} <i>I may die, &c.</i>
		muéras	
		muera	
Plur.	{	murámos	
		muráis	
		muéran	

Three Imperfects :

Sing.	{	muriéra, muriése, moriría	} <i>I could, should, or would die, &c.</i>
		muriéras, muriéses, morirías	
		muriéra, muriése, moriría	
Plur.	{	muriéramos, muriésemos, moriríamos	
		muriérais, muriésseis, moriríais	
		muriéran, muriésen, morirían	

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	seá	} <i>I am dead, &c.</i>
		seás	
		seá	
Plur.	{	seamos	
		seáis	
		sean	

Two Preterpluperfects :

Sing.	{	fuéra, fuése	} <i>I was dead, &c.</i>
		fuéras, fuéses	
		fuéra, fuése	
Plur.	{	fuéramos, fuésemos	
		fuérais, fuésseis	
		fuéran, fuésen	

First Future :

Sing.	{	muriére	} <i>I shall or will die, &c.</i>
		muriéres	
		muriére	
Plur.	{	muriéremos	
		muriéreis	
		muriéren	

Second Future :

fuére muérto, &c. *I shall be dead, &c.*

Infinitive Mood.

<i>Present,</i>	morír	<i>To die</i>
<i>Perfect,</i>	fér muérto	<i>To be dead</i>
<i>Future,</i>	havér de morír	<i>To die hereafter</i>
<i>Gerund,</i>	muriéndo	<i>Dying</i>
<i>Part. Pass.</i>	muérto	<i>Dead.</i>

The Irregular Verb servír, To serve.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	sírvo	<i>I serve</i>
		sírves	<i>Thou servest</i>
		sírve	<i>He serves</i>
Plur.	{	fervímos	<i>We serve</i>
		fervís	<i>Ye serve</i>
		sírven	<i>They serve.</i>

Preterimperfect :

Sing.	{	fervía	} <i>I did serve, &c.</i>
		fervías	
		fervía	
Plur.	{	fervíamos	
		fervíais	
		fervían	

First Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	ferví	} <i>I served, &c.</i>
		fervíste	
		fervió	
Plur.	{	fervímos	
		fervísteis	
		ferviéron	

Second Preterperfect:

Sing.	{	hé	} servído, <i>I have served, &c.</i>
		hás	
		há	
Plur.	{	hemos	
		havéis	
		han	

Preterpluperfect:

Sing.	{	havía	} servído, <i>I had served, &c.</i>
		havías	
		havía	
Plur.	{	havíamos	
		havíais	
		havían	

First Future:

Sing.	{	serviré	<i>I shall or will serve</i>
		servirás	<i>Thou shalt or wilt serve</i>
		servirá	<i>He shall or will serve</i>
Plur.	{	serviremos	<i>We shall or will serve</i>
		serviréis	<i>Ye shall or will serve</i>
		servirán	<i>They shall or will serve.</i>

Second Future:

he de servir, &c. *I must serve, &c.*

Third Future:

havía de servir, &c. *I was to serve, &c.*

Fourth Future:

havré de servir, &c. *I shall be obliged to serve, &c.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	sírve tú	<i>Serve thou</i>
		sírva el	<i>Let him serve</i>
Plur.	{	sirvámos nosotros	<i>Let us serve</i>
		servíd vosotros	<i>Serve ye</i>
		sírvan ellos	<i>Let them serve:</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods.

Present Tense:

(que) Sing.	{	sírva	} <i>I may serve, &c.</i>
		sírvas	
		sírva	
Plur.	{	sirvámos	
		sirváis	
		sírvan	

Three Imperfects:

Sing.	{	firviéra, firviéſſe, ſerviría	} <i>I might, could, should, or would serve, &c.</i>
	{	firviéras, firviéſſes, ſervirías	
	{	firviéra, firviéſſe, ſerviría	
Plur.	{	firviéramos, firviéſſemos, ſerviríamos	
	{	firviérais, firviéſſeis, ſerviríais	
	{	firviéran, firviéſſen, ſervirían	

Præterperfect:

Sing.	{	háya	} <i>ſervído, I have served, &c.</i>
	{	háyas	
	{	háya	
Plur.	{	hayámos	
	{	hayáis	
	{	háyan	

Præterpluperfect:

Sing.	{	huviéra, huviéſſe	} <i>ſervído, I had or should have served, &c.</i>
	{	huviéras, huviéſſes	
	{	huviéra, huviéſſe	
Plur.	{	huviéramos, huviéſſemos	
	{	huviérais, huviéſſeis	
	{	huviéran, huviéſſen	

First Future:

Sing.	{	firviére	} <i>I shall or will serve, &c.</i>
	{	firviéres	
	{	firviére	
Plur.	{	firviéremos	
	{	firviéreis	
	{	firviéren	

Second Future:

huviére ſervído, &c. *I shall have served, &c.*

Infinitive Mood.

Present,	ſervír	<i>To serve</i>
Perfect,	haver ſervído	<i>To have served</i>
Future,	haver de ſervír	<i>To serve hereafter</i>
Gerund,	firviéndo	<i>Serving</i>
Part. Act.	firviénte	<i>He who serves</i>
Part. Pass.	ſervído	<i>Served.</i>

The following Verbs are conjugated after the same manner as the Verb *servir*, through all the Moods and Tenses.

concebír	to conceive	seguír	to follow
gemír	to sigh	reñír	to scold
medír	to measure	vellír	to dress
pedír	to ask	reír	to laugh.
perseguír	to persecute		

Observe, That *seguír* and its compounds make *sigo* in the Present Indicative Mood, and *siga, sigas, siga, &c.* in the Subjunctive Mood.

The Verbs *elegír, fingír, ungír*, to chuse, to feign, to anoint, make *elijo, finjo, únjo*, in the Present Indicative Mood; and *elija, finja, únja*, in the Subjunctive and Optative.

Salír, to go out. Present Indicative, *Salgo, sales, sale, salimos, salís, salen*. Imperative, *Sal, salga, salgamos, salid, salgan*. Subjunctive and Optative, *Salga, salgas, salga, salgamos, salgáis, salgan*. The rest regular.

Conducír, to conduct. *Condúzco, conduces, conduce, conducimos, conducís, conducen*. Preterperfect, *Conduxe, conduxiste, conduxo, conduximos, conduxisteis, conduxéron*. Present Optative and Subjunctive, *Condúzca, conduzcas, &c.* Preterimperfects, *Conduxéra, conduxésse, &c.* Future, *Conduxére*. In the same manner are conjugated

introducír	to introduce	traducír	to translate
reducír	to reduce	producír	to produce.
inducír	to induce		

Of Verbs Passive.

Sér oído, To be heard.

Indicative.

Present :

Sing.	{	sói oído	} <i>I am heard, &c.</i>
		éres oído	
		es oído	
Plur.	{	sómos oídos	
		soís oídos	
		son oídos	

Imperfect :

Sing.	{	éra oído	} <i>I was heard, &c.</i>
		éras oído	
		éra oído	
Plur.	{	éramos oídos	
		érais oídos	
		éran oídos	

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	fuí oído	} <i>I have been heard, &c.</i>
		fuíste oído	
		fué oído	
Plur.	{	fuímos oídos	
		fuísteis oídos	
		fuéron oídos	

And so through all the Tenses and Moods.

Reciprocal Verbs.

Ir se, To go.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense :

Sing.	{	me voy	<i>I go</i>
		te vas	<i>Thou goest</i>
		se va	<i>He goes</i>
Plur.	{	nos vámos	<i>We go</i>
		os vaís	<i>Ye go</i>
		se van	<i>They go</i>

Preterpluperfect :

Sing.	{	me íba	<i>I did go</i>
		te íbas	<i>Thou didst go</i>
		se íba	<i>He did go</i>
Plur.	{	nos ibámos	<i>We did go</i>
		os ibáis	<i>Ye did go</i>
		se íban	<i>They did go.</i>

Preterperfect :

Sing.	{	me fuí	<i>I went</i>
		te fuíste	<i>Thou wentest</i>
		se fué	<i>He went</i>
Plur.	{	nos fuímos	<i>We went</i>
		os fuísteis	<i>Ye went</i>
		se fuéron	<i>They went.</i>

Preterpluperfect :

me había ido	<i>I had gone, &c.</i>
te havías ido, &c.	

First Future :

Sing.	{	me iré	<i>I shall or will go</i>
		te irás	<i>Thou shalt or wilt go</i>
		se irá	<i>He shall or will go</i>
Plur.	{	nos iremos	<i>We shall or will go</i>
		os iréis	<i>Ye shall or will go</i>
		se irán	<i>They shall or will go.</i>

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	vete	<i>Go thou</i>
		vaya se	<i>Let him go</i>
Plur.	{	vayámos nos	<i>Let us go</i>
		id os	<i>Go ye</i>
		vayan se	<i>Let them go.</i>

And so on through the other Tenses.

Impersonal Actives.

Convenir, *To be convenient.*

Indicative.

Present,	conviene	<i>It is convenient</i>
Imperfect,	convenía	<i>It was convenient.</i>
First Perf.	convino	} <i>It has been convenient.</i>
Second Perf.	ha convenido	
Future,	convendrá	<i>It shall or will be convenient.</i>
Imperative,	convenga	<i>Let it be convenient.</i>

And so in the third Person of the other Moods.

Observe, That this verb *convenir* is given here as impersonal, only in this signification, of *being convenient*, or *proper*; for *convenir*, when it signifies *to agree*, has all its Persons.

Of the Impersonal Passives.

Escribirse, *To be written.*

Indicative.

Present,	escribe se	<i>It is written</i>
Imperfect,	escribía se	<i>It was written</i>
First Perf.	escribió se	} <i>It has been written</i>
Second Perf.	se ha escrito	
Pluperf.	se había escrito	<i>It had been written</i>
Future,	escribirá se	<i>It will be written.</i>

After the same manner are conjugated

Decírse, *To be said.*

Se dice *or* dice se *It is said.*

Referírse, *To be related.*

Se refiere *or* refiere se *It is related.*

The Verbs of this Conjugation are likewise conjugated with the Verb *estár*, and the Gerund; as,

Estói escribiendo	<i>I am writing</i>
Estói oyendo	<i>I am hearing</i>
Estói viniendo	<i>I am coming</i>
Estói gimiendo	<i>I am sighing</i>
Estói refiriendo	<i>I am relating.</i>

And so through all the Persons, Tenses, and Moods.

Of Adverbs.

An Adverb is a part of speech indeclinable, without Gender, Number, or Case, and serves only to declare the number or circumstances of the action or passion.

Example.—When I say *ámole tiernamente*, I love him tenderly, the word *tiernamente*, tenderly, expresses the circumstance of the Verb *amár*, to love.

There are several sorts of Adverbs, expressing the quality, quantity, time, &c. as may be seen in the following list.

Adverbs of Quality.

These Adverbs are derived in *Spanish*, as in *English*, from the Adjectives, and are formed by adding *mente* to the Feminine Gender of Adjectives of two terminations, and to the other Adjectives of one termination; as from *buéno*, *buéna*, good, take the Feminine *buéna*, and add *mente* to it, you shall have the Adverb *buénamente*, goodly, with goodness. From the Adjectives of one termination the Adverbs are formed by adding *mente*; as from *facíl*, easy; *cruél*, cruel; *feliz*, happy; *facilmente*, easily; *cruélmente*, cruelly; *felizmente*, happily; *áltamente*, highly; *buénamente* or *bien*, well.

well; *hermósamente*, handsomely; *fiéramente*, fiercely; *ferózmemente*, ferociously; *sántamente*, holily, &c.

Adverbs of Quantity.

Múcho	<i>much</i>	Mas	<i>more</i>
Poco	<i>little</i>	Menos	<i>less</i>
Demasiádo	<i>too much</i>	Harto	<i>enough.</i>

Observe, That *harto* and *demasiádo* must agree in Gender with the Substantives, though they are Adverbs; therefore you must say, *harta agua*, water enough; *demasiáda paciência*, too much patience, &c.

Adverbs of Time.

Ahóra	<i>now</i>	Hóy	<i>to-day</i>
Ahiér	<i>yesterday</i>	Mañana	<i>to-morrow</i>
Antehiér	<i>the day before yesterday</i>	Mucho há	<i>long since</i>
		Poco há	<i>lately</i>
Antes	<i>before</i>	Luégo	<i>directly</i>
Aún	<i>yet, even</i>	Núnca	<i>never</i>
A menúdo	<i>often</i>	Jamás	
Entónces	<i>then</i>	Quándo	<i>when</i>
Siempre	<i>always</i>	Mientrás	<i>whilst</i>
Repéntemente	<i>suddenly</i>	Tarde	<i>late</i>
Tempráno	<i>early</i>	A la tarde	<i>in the evening.</i>

Adverbs of Place.

Aquí	<i>here</i>	Delanté	<i>before</i>
Allí	<i>there</i>	Detrás	<i>behind</i>
Ahí	<i>in this place</i>	Apárte	<i>aside</i>
Adónde	<i>where</i>	Arriba	<i>above</i>
Acá	<i>hither</i>	Abáxo	<i>below</i>
Acullá	<i>yonder</i>	Cérca	<i>near</i>
De dónde	<i>from whence</i>	Cábe	<i>close by</i>
De aquí	<i>from hence</i>	Junto	<i>adjoining</i>
De allí	<i>from thence</i>	Enfrénte	<i>facing</i>
Dentro	<i>within</i>	Lexós	<i>far off</i>
En	<i>in</i>	Encíma	<i>upon</i>
Fuera	<i>out</i>	Debáxo	<i>underneath.</i>

Adverbs of Affirmation.

Sí	<i>yes</i>	Verdadéramente	<i>truly</i>
Cierto	<i>truly</i>	Támbien	<i>also</i>
Ciertamente	<i>certainly</i>	A'ntes	<i>rather</i>
En verdad	<i>in truth</i>		

Of

Of Denying.

No	<i>no, or not</i>	Ni	<i>neither</i>
Nada	<i>nothing</i>	Tampoco	<i>neither.</i>

Of Number.

Una vez	<i>once</i>	Muchas veces	<i>often</i>
Dos veces	<i>twice</i>	Pocas veces	<i>seldom</i>
Tres veces	<i>three times</i>	A menudo	<i>often.</i>

Of Shewing.

Hé aquí *behold here.*

Of Encouraging.

Ea, ea pues *make them.*

Of Wishing.

Oxalá *would to God* | O si *O if it could be.*

Of Asking.

Porqué	<i>why</i>	De donde	<i>from whence</i>
Que	<i>what</i>	Quándo	<i>when</i>
Dónde	<i>where</i>	Como	<i>how</i>
Adónde	<i>whither</i>	Acáso	<i>perhaps.</i>

Of Doubting.

Quizá *perhaps* | Por ventúra *peradventure.*

Of Order.

Priméramente	<i>firstly</i>	Al cábo	<i>at the end</i>
Déspues	<i>after</i>	Finalmente	<i>in fine</i>
Al fin	<i>at the end</i>	A lo último	<i>lastly, &c.</i>

Of Likeness.

Cómo	<i>as</i>	Así	<i>so</i>
Cáfi	<i>almost</i>	Tan, tanto	<i>so much, &c.</i>

Of Comparison.

Más	<i>more</i>	Méjor	<i>better</i>
Ménos	<i>less</i>	Peór	<i>worse</i>
Junto	<i>together</i>	A montónes	<i>in heaps.</i>

Note, That the Adjectives are sometimes taken as Adverbs, and then they retain the Masculine Gender; as Primeró voy allá, first I go there.

Of Conjunctions.

A Conjunction is a part of speech that joins words and sentences together. Some Conjunctions are copulative, as uniting words, and connecting the sense; others are disjunctive, dividing the sense, and only joining the expressions; others are conditional, shewing the causes of things; others rational or conclusive, which some call collective or relative; and others adverbative.

Conjunctions Copulative are *y* and *é*, signifying *and*. *Y* is put before all words, excepting those that begin with *i*, before which you must put *e*; as, *los Españóles é Inglés*, the Spaniards and the English; *los Francésés é Italiános*, the French and Italians; *como*, as; *tám-bien*, also.

Conjunctions Disjunctive are, *ni*, neither; *ó* or *ú*, or, either; *yá*, either; as, *yá, esto, yá aquéllo*, either this or that.

Caulative are, *porqué*, why, wherefore, &c.

Conditional; *si*, if; *dado que*, granting that.

Exceptive; *sino*, if not; *mas*, but; *ótramente*, otherwise.

There are others of another sort; as, *á lo menos*, at least; *aunque*, although; *todavía*, notwithstanding, nevertheless.

Of Prepositions.

A Preposition is a part of speech most commonly set before a Noun, a Pronoun, or Verb; as, *delánte del Rey*, before the King, &c.

The following Prepositions govern the Genitive Case:

Antes, before; as, *antes del día*, before day-break; *antes de escribír*, before writing.

Delánte, before; as, *delánte de Dios*, before God; *delánte de mi casa*, before my house.

Déntro, within; as, *déntro de la iglesia*, within the church.

Detrás

Detrás, behind ; as, *detrás del palácio*, behind the palace.

Debáxo, or *báxo*, under ; as, *báxo de la mésa* hay un *pérro*, under the table there is a dog ; *estába debáxo de un árbol*, *quándo llovió*, I was under a tree when it rained.

Encíma, upon ; as, *encíma del agua*, upon the water ; *encíma de la mésa*, upon the table.

Al derredór, or *rededór*, about, round about ; as, *al derredór de la ciudád*, round about the city ; *estában al rededór de treinta*, they were about thirty.

Cérca, near ; as, *Rocheſter está cerca de Londres*, Rocheſter is near London.

Acérca, concerning or near ; as, *yo he de hablar con vm acerca de un negocio particular*, I muſt ſpeak with you concerning a private affair ; *los días acerca de Navidád*, *ſon muy fríos*, the Days about Chriſtmas are very cold, or near Chriſtmas.

Fuéra, out, or beſides ; *estuvo fuéra toda la noche*, he was out all night ; *fuéra de éſto*, *háy mucho mas*, beſides this, there is much more.

En frén-te, over-againſt, facing ; as, *en frén-te de mi caſa*, over-againſt my houſe ; *en frén-te de la igleſia*, facing the church.

Prepoſitions governing the Accuſative.

Ante, before, in the preſence ; as, *abiér pareció ante mí*, yeſterday he appeared before me.

Entre, among, between ; as, *hay mucha diferéncia entre los dos*, there is a great deal of difference between them two ; *entre los hombres*, *pocos piénſan antes de hablar*, among men, few think before they ſpeak.

Sobre, upon ; as, *todo lo que tengo, ſobre mí lo llevo*, all that I have I carry upon me, or about me.

Según, according to ; as, *ſegún las leyes del reino*, according to the laws of the kingdom.

Hasta, until, even to ; as, *me pasearé, háſta las quatro de la tarde*, I will walk until four o'clock in the afternoon ; *háſta mañana*, till to-morrow ; *iré con vm háſta Madrid*.

Madrid, I will go along with you as far as *Madrid*, even to *Madrid*.

Hacia, towards; as, *vive hacia el rio*, he lives towards the river, about the river.

Por, for, by, through; as, *baga vin esto por amor de Dios*, do this for God's sake; *encontré mi amigo, quando passaba por la calle*, I met my friend when I passed through the street; *lo haré por mi palabra, por mi vida, por mi fé*, I will do it, by my word, by my life, by my faith.

En, in; as, *espéro y créo en Dios*, I hope and believe in God.

Contra, against; as, *habló mucho abiér contra el goviérno*, he spoke a great deal yesterday against the government.

Of Interjections.

An Interjection is a part of speech that discovers the mind to be seized or affected with some passion, as of joy, pain, admiration, &c.

To express mirth, they make use in *Spanish* of *A*; as, *A que bien jugaremos*, Ah! how we will play.

To express admiration, *¡cáge me Dios*, God help me!

To express pain or grief, *¡Ay de mí!* Alas for me!

Wishing, *¡oxalá!* would to God, &c. *O*; as, *O Dios! O dolor! O God! O pain! &c.*

Observations upon some Spanish expressions and phrases.

All languages have some peculiar turns, which cannot be expressed by the same words in another tongue; therefore I thought proper to say something about those words and phrases found in the *Spanish* tongue.

In the first place, the Preposition *des* is inseparable from some words, and is never to be used but in composition, as signifying nothing by itself; but being joined to another word, it denotes a privation of what the other signifies; thus, *honra* is honour, and *deshonra* is

is dishonour, or disgrace; *dícha*, good fortune; *desdicha*, misfortune. *Des* has the same effect, when joined with Verbs; as, *bacér*, to make, to do; *desbacér*, to undo; *armár*, to arm; *desarmár*, to disarm.

En signifies commonly *in*, as, *en casa*, in the house; *en la calle*, in the street: but in some cases, it has a very particular meaning; as, *estár en cuérpo*, signifying literally to be in body; but the true sense of it is, to be without either a coat or cloak, for a man; and for a woman, to be without a veil; so that the body is more exposed to view without an upper garment. *Estár en piéernas*, literally to be in legs, signifies to be bare-legged; that is, the legs exposed without stockings.

Estár en carnes, verbally, is to be in flesh; but the true meaning of it is, to be quite naked. *Estár en cuéros*, to be in skin, signifies also to be stark-naked.

When this Preposition *en* is before an Infinitive in *Spanish*, then it is an English Gerund; as *consiste en hablar bien*, it consists in speaking well; but when it is found before a Gerund, it signifies *after*, and *at* in English; as, *en cenáudo*, after supper, or at supper; *en confessáudo la verdád*, after you confess the truth. *En* signifies also *as soon*; as, *en acabáudo iré*, as soon as I have done, I will go; *en dispertáudo me levantaré*, when I awake, I will get up.

Hidálgo is a *gentleman*, a man of good birth, being a contraction of *hijo de algo*, son of something, that is, of a person of note, or remarkable for something; not for much money, which in *Spain* does not make a gentleman, but for something honourable, as virtue, learning, wisdom, or courage.

Vuéstrea mercéd is generally contracted into *ustéd* and *ustédes* in speaking, and in writing expressed by these letters, *V. M.* and *V. M. S.* This is a polite expression, being always used when any civility is shewn, the *Spaniards* never saying *tu*, thou, to one another, excepting a master to a servant, a father to his children, a brother to his brother, &c. The common word
therefore

therefore, in discourse between people of fashion or good breeding, is *usted* for *vuestra merced*; which expression is like *Your Worship* in *English*; for in speaking to a nobleman in *Spain* they use *vuestra Señoría*, contracted into *usía*, your Lordship; *vuestra Excelencia*, contracted into *ussencia*, for your Excellency, &c.

There is another respectful way of speaking, which is, by calling a man by his name, though speaking to him; as, *Sea servido de sentárse el Señor Don Juan*, May it please Don John to sit down, &c. where we may observe, that the word *Don* is peculiar to the *Spanish*, and was formerly only given to Knights and persons of distinction; but now it is very common.

Señor is like the Latin *Dominus*, either *Sir* or *Lord*, and therefore equivocal; for they say *Si Señor*, Yes, Sir, to the least gentleman, as we do *Sir* to the King, and to any other; yet *Señor* is a *Lord*: for though in speaking we say, *Señor Don Juan*, *Señor Don Pedro*, yet a letter must not be superscribed *Al Señor Don Pedro*, unless he be a Lord; because then it implies dignity, and in common speaking it does not: so in speaking to say, *Es un Señor*, or *Es un gran Señor*, implies that he is a Lord, or a great Lord. However, in the beginning of a letter we use *Mui Señor mío*, without giving the title of Lord, but only meaning *My good Master*, or *Good Sir*.

Fulano, *fulana*; *zutano*, *zutana*, or their diminutives, *fulanillo*, *fulanito*, &c. are words used to signify a person without name, as when they say such a one; the two first being used to express two distinct persons, as, such a one and such a one. The first of them is always used, if only one person be spoken of; and the second never, but when there is occasion to mention two. They are likewise used in the Feminine Gender.

Observe, That most of the Adverbs formed of the Adjectives, are turned likewise in *Spanish* by the Preposition *con*, and the Substantive; as *felizmente*, happily, is the same as *con felicidad*, with happiness; *atrevidamente*,

vidamente, boldly; *con atrevimiénto*, with boldness; *elegantemente*, elegantly; *con elegáncia*, with elegance; *cortézmente*, politely; *con cortesía*, with politeness; *liberálmente*, liberally; *con liberalidád*, with liberality, &c.

The three degrees of comparison are also found among the Adverbs; as, *hermósamente*, handsomely; *mas hermósamente*, *hermosíssimamente*.

Ay, Hay, Abi.

There are several who make no difference between *áy* the Interjection, and *háy* the Verb Impersonal; between *havér*, and *abí* the Adverb; but there is a great one in their being spelt and pronounced right. The Interjection *Ay*, Alas, must have the accent upon the *á*, and be pronounced long; the Verb Impersonal *háy*, there is, is written with an accent upon the *á*, and pronounced accordingly; the Adverb *abí*, there, has the accent upon the *í*, which is pronounced long.

Of Para and Por.

As the young learners, and even a great many *Spaniards*, confound these two Adverbs, it appears necessary to make the following observations:

Para, for, signifies also *to*, when it is found before the Infinitive in *Spanish*, and serves to denote and express the utility of, or detriment to, any thing; as, *esta pluma es para escribir*, this pen is to write; *este libro es para mi hermano*, this book is for my brother.

In *Spanish* we make use of *de*, *à*, *para* or *por*, before the Infinitive, only when in *English* *to* is made use of; but it is with this distinction, that *de* is put before the Infinitive after the Verbs *venir*, *havér*, *tenér*, *volver*, &c. or a noun; as, *vengo de pasear*, I come from walking; *hè de hacer esto*, I must do this; *que tengo de hacer?* what must I do? *vuélvo de apurárle sobre este negocio*, I come from pressing him upon this affair; *cuidád de hacer esta obra bien*, take care to do this work well.

A is made use of before the Infinitive, when placed after a Verb expressing motion ; as, *voy à trabajar*, I am going to work ; *determine le un à hacer me el favor que le pido* ; engage him to make me the favour I ask him.

Para is put before the Infinitive of Verbs when it expresses any habit, custom, use, &c. as, *Dios nos hizo para amarlo*, God made us for to love him ; *sirvo a Dios para gozar del premio*, I serve God to enjoy the reward ; *para que*, for what ; *porque*, why ; as, *para que es esto ?* for what is this ? *porque lo ha hecho assi ?* why did he make it so ? *Para que* signifies also *that*, or *in order that* ; as, *para que venga à verme*, that he may come and see me ; *para poco*, good for little, of short capacity.

Con signifies *with*, and is joined with the Pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, in this manner ; *con migo*, with me ; *con tigo*, with thee ; *con sigo*, with himself. This Preposition *con* is often preceded by *para*, and then it signifies *erga* in Latin, or *towards* in English ; as, *seámos piadosos para con los pobres*, let us be tender, merciful, towards the poor ; *para con migo no es cierto*, in my opinion, it is not certain ; *para con todos es liberal*, he is generous with all, or towards all.

Por sometimes denotes that the thing is not yet done ; as, *esta obra está por acabar*, this work is not yet finished. It signifies too the end of, or means to do a thing ; as *riñeron por mi*, they quarrelled on my account.

Por, by, for, or through ; as, *por empeño lo alcancé*, by protection I obtained it ; *voy per dinero*, I am going for money ; *me paseo por los campos*, I walk through the fields.

Por, though, although, &c. as, *por grande que sea, puede servir*, though it be great, it may serve, &c.

Numbers called Cardinals.

Uno,	<i>one</i>	Quarénta,	<i>forty</i>
Dos,	<i>two</i>	Cincúenta,	<i>fifty</i>
Tres,	<i>three</i>	Sesénta,	<i>sixty</i>
Quátro,	<i>four</i>	Seténta,	<i>seventy</i>
Cínco,	<i>five</i>	Ochénta,	<i>eighty</i>
Séis	<i>six</i>	Novénta,	<i>ninety</i>
Siéte,	<i>seven</i>	Ciénto,	<i>a hundred</i>
Ocho,	<i>eight</i>	Ciénto y úno, &c.	<i>a hundred and one</i>
Nuéve,	<i>nine</i>		
Diez,	<i>ten</i>	Dociéntos,	<i>two hundred</i>
Once,	<i>eleven</i>	Treciéntos,	<i>three hundred</i>
Dóce,	<i>twelve</i>	Quatro ciéntos,	<i>four hundred</i>
Tréce	<i>thirteen</i>	Quiniéntos,	<i>five hundred</i>
Catórce,	<i>fourteen</i>	Seiciéntos,	<i>six hundred</i>
Quínce,	<i>fifteen</i>	Seteciéntos,	<i>seven hundred</i>
Diéz y seis,	<i>sixteen</i>	Ocho ciéntos,	<i>eight hundred</i>
Diéz y siéte,	<i>seventeen</i>	Nuéve ciéntos,	<i>nine hundred</i>
Diés y ócho,	<i>eighteen</i>	Mil,	<i>a thousand</i>
Diéz y nuéve,	<i>nineteen</i>	Dos mil,	<i>two thousand</i>
Veínte,	<i>twenty</i>	Tres mil,	<i>three thousand</i>
Veínte y úno,	<i>twenty-one</i>	Cien mil,	<i>an hundred thousand</i>
Veínte y dos, &c.	<i>twenty-two</i>	Millon,	<i>a million.</i>
Treínta,	<i>thirty</i>		

Observe, that all these numbers are not declined, being of the Common Gender, except *uno, una,* and *ciénto, dociéntos, dociéntas*; so they say, *treciéntas mugéres*, three hundred women; *quatrociéntas, quiniéntas, seisciéntas, siéte ciéntas, ochociéntas, noveciéntas*.

N. B. *Uno*, Masculine, when it comes before a Noun also Masculine, loses *o*; as, *un hombre*, a man; *un libro*, a pen; *un soldádo*, a soldier.

The Plural, *únos, únas*, is taken instead of *algúnos, algúnas*, and signifies *some*; as, *unos Réyes*, some Kings; *unas Réinas*, some Queens.

Ciénto likewise loses *to* before a Noun, either Masculine or Feminine; therefore you must say, *cien soldádos, cien libras*, not *ciénto soldádos*; only, it retains *to* when it is followed by another number; as, *ciénto y uno, ciénto y dos, &c.*

Sometime

Sometimes *ciento* is made a Substantive; as, *un ciento* or *un centenár de castañas*, one hundred of chestnuts.

Millón has the Plural, which is *millones*; but it is of the Masculine Gender.

The Numbers called Ordinals.

Primero,	<i>first</i>	Trigésimo, or treinténo,	<i>thirtieth</i>
Segundo,	<i>second</i>	Quadragesimo, or quarenténo,	<i>fortieth</i>
Tercero,	<i>third</i>	Quinquagesimo, or cincuenténo,	<i>fiftieth</i>
Quarto,	<i>fourth</i>	Sexagesimo, or sesenténo,	<i>sixtieth</i>
Quinto,	<i>fifth</i>	Septuagesimo, or setenténo,	<i>seventieth</i>
Sexto,	<i>sixth</i>	Octuagesimo, or ochenténo,	<i>eightieth</i>
Séptimo,	<i>seventh</i>	Nonagesimo, or noventéno,	<i>ninetieth</i>
Octavo,	<i>eighth</i>	Centésimo, or centéno,	<i>hundredth</i>
Novo, or novéno,	<i>ninth</i>	Doscientésimo, or docenténo,	<i>two hundredth</i>
Décimo, or decéno,	<i>tenth</i>	Trecentésimo, or trecenténo,	<i>three hundredth</i>
Undécimo, or oncéno,	<i>eleventh</i>	Quatrocentésimo, or quatrocenténo,	<i>four hundredth</i>
Duodécimo, or docéno,	<i>twelfth</i>	Quingentésimo, or quintenténo,	<i>five hundredth</i>
Décimo tércio, or trecéno,	<i>thirteenth</i>	Milésimo,	<i>thousandth.</i>
Décimo quarto, or catorcéno,	<i>fourteenth</i>		
Décimo quinto, or quincéno,	<i>fifteenth</i>		
Décimo sexto,	<i>sixteenth</i>		
Décimo séptimo,	<i>seventeenth</i>		
Décimo octavo,	<i>eighteenth</i>		
Décimo nono,	<i>nineteenth</i>		
Vigésimo, or veinténo,	<i>twentieth</i>		

We seldom make use in Spain of these Ordinals, and it is more common, instead of them, to take the Cardinals, in the numbers above ten; as, *en el siglo catorce*, for *en el siglo décimo cuarto*, in the fourteenth century, &c.

The Ordinals are Masculine, and made Feminine by changing the last *o* into *a*; as, *primera*, *primera*, first.

Of the Adverbs of Place, *Acá, Aquí, &c.*

Aquí, here, in this place, where one stands; as, *aquí está Don Juan*, Don Juan is here.

Aquí, now; as, *hasta aquí hemos tratado*, till now we have treated, &c.

Aquí, putting the Particle *de* before, expresses time, hour, or day; as, *de aquí adelante*, henceforward.

Aquí, this; as, *de aquí vienen los errores* from this come the errors.

Aquí, adding *hé*, signifies *here is*; as, *hé aquí doscientas libras*, here are two hundred pounds.

Aquí de Dios, a manner of speaking, calling upon God as a witness of what is said or done.

Aquí del Rey: this expression is made use of, when somebody, unjustly oppressed, implores the assistance of the King.

Aquí fué ello, or *aquí fué Troya*, Troy was here; used when they want to describe any confusion, quarrel, noise, &c.

Acá, here, expressing the place where is either the person who speaks, or the thing spoken of.

Déspues acá, since that time; *de cuándo acá*, or *desde quando acá?* from what time? how long? *Acá como alá* signifies *after the same manner*, or *the same method*.

Allá, there, expresses sometimes a fixed place; as, *allá iré donde tu estás*, I will go there, where thou art; and sometimes any distant place; as, *allá-en América hay mucho oro*, in America there is a great deal of gold.

Allí, there, in that place.

Abí, there, expresses the place where stands the person spoken to; as, *abí donde estás*, there where you are, or the place near the person we speak to; *abí será ello*, there will be a great noise or confusion.

Acullá, there, in another place distant from the person who speaks.

Allende, on the other side; as, *allénde la mar*, beyond the sea; *allénde el río*, beyond the river.

Abbreviations used in the Spanish language.

A. C.	Año Christáno,	in the year of Christ
a. a'	Arróba, or arrobas,	twenty-five pounds
A. A.	Autóres,	authors
Adm ^{or}	Administradór,	administrator
Ag ^{to}	Agósto,	August
An ^{to}	António,	Anthony
App ^{co} Ap ^{ca}	Apostólico, ca,	apostolical
Art.	Artículo,	article
Arzbpo.	Arzobispo,	Archbishop
B.	Beáto,	blessed
b. (in quoting)	Vuélta,	turn over
B. L. M.	Beso ò besa las manos,	I kiss the hands
B. L. P.	Beso los pies,	I kiss the feet
B ^{mo} P ^c	Beatísimo Padre,	most blessed Father
C. M. B.	Cúyas manos beso,	whose hands I kiss
C. P. B.	Cuyos piés beso,	whose feet I kiss
Cám ^a	Cámara,	chamber
Cap.	Capítulo,	chapter
Cap ^a	Capitán,	captain
Capp ⁿ	Capellán,	chaplain
Col.	Colúna,	column
Com ^s	Comisario,	commissary
Comp ^a	Compañía,	company
Cons ^o	Conséjo,	council
Cor ^{te}	Corriente,	current,
D. D ⁿ D ^a	Don, Doña,	Don, Dona
D. D.	Doctóres,	Doctors
D ^r D ^{or}	Doctór,	Doctor
D ⁱ	Dios,	God
Dho. dha.	Dicho, dicha,	said
Dro.	Derécho,	duty
En ^o	Enéro,	January
Ex ^{to} Ex ^{ma}	Excellentísimo, ma,	Most Excellent
Exc ^a	Excelléncia,	Excellency
Fho. Fha.	Fécho, fécha,	dated
Feb ^o	Febrero,	February
Fol.	Fólio,	folio
Fr.	Fray,	brother
Franc ^{co}	Francisco,	Francis
Frnz.	Fernandéz,	Fernandez
Gue. gde.	Guárde,	save
Gra.	Grácia,	grace
Gen ^l	Generál,	General
Igla.	Iglésia,	church

Ill ^e	Ilústre,	<i>Illustrious</i>
Ill ^{mo} Ill ^{ma}	Ilustríssimo, ma,	<i>Most Illustrious</i>
Inq ^{or}	Inquisidór,	<i>inquisitor</i>
Jhs.	Jesús,	<i>Jesus</i>
Jph.	Joseph,	<i>Joseph</i>
J ^a	Juan,	<i>John</i>
Lib.	Libro,	<i>book</i>
Lib ^s	Libras,	<i>pounds</i>
Lin.	Línea,	<i>line</i>
M. P. S.	Mui poderóso Señor,	<i>most powerful Lord</i>
M ^e	Madre	<i>mother</i>
M ^r	Monfiúr,	<i>master</i>
M ^s a ^s	Múchos años,	<i>many years</i>
Mag ^d	Magestád,	<i>Majesty</i>
Mig ^l	Miguél,	<i>Michael</i>
Mnro.	Minístro,	<i>minister</i>
Mrd.	Mercéd,	<i>favour</i>
Mrn.	Martin,	<i>Martin</i>
Mrnz.	Martínéz,	<i>Martinez</i>
Mro.	Maéstro,	<i>master</i>
Mrs.	Maravedís,	<i>maravedis</i>
M. S.	Manuscrito,	<i>manuscript</i>
M. S. S.	Manuscritos,	<i>manuscripts</i>
N. S ^a	Nuésttra Señóra,	<i>our Lady</i>
Nro. nra.	Nuésttro, nuésttra,	<i>our</i>
Nov ^e 9 ^{re}	Noviém-bre,	<i>November</i>
Oppo.	Obís-po,	<i>Bishop</i>
Oct ^{re} 8 ^{re}	Octúb-re,	<i>October</i>
On on ^s	Onza, u onzas,	<i>ounce, ounces</i>
Ord ⁿ ord ^s	Orden, órdenes,	<i>order, orders</i>
P. D.	Posdáta,	<i>postscript</i>
P ^a	Para,	<i>for</i>
P ^e	Pádre,	<i>father</i>
Po	Pédro,	<i>Peter</i>
Pr	Por,	<i>for, or by</i>
P ^e	Piés,	<i>feet</i>
P ^a	Pláta,	<i>silver, or plate</i>
P ^{te}	Parte,	<i>part</i>
P ^{to}	Puérto,	<i>port</i>
Pag.	Página,	<i>page</i>
Pl.	Plana,	<i>trowel</i>
Publo	Público,	<i>public</i>
R ⁱ R ^s	Reál, reáles,	<i>rayals</i>
R ^{mo}	Reverendíssimo,	<i>Most reverend</i>
R ^{bi}	Recibí,	<i>I received</i>
Q. q ^e	Que,	<i>that</i>
Q ^{do}	Quando,	<i>when</i>

Q ⁿ	Quién,	who
Q ^{to}	Quanto,	how much
S.	San ó Santo,	Saint
S. M.	Su Magestád,	his Majesty
Sr Sr Sra	Señór, Señóra,	Sir, Lady
Septe 7 ^{bre}	Septiembre,	September
Ser ^{no} Ser ^{ma}	Serenísimo, ma,	Most Serene
SS ^{ne}	Escribáno,	notary
Sup ^{ca}	Súplica,	entreats
Sup ^{te}	Suplicánte,	petitioner
Ten ^{te}	Teniénte,	Lieutenant
Tom.	Tomo,	tome
Tpo.	Tiempo,	time
V. M.	Vuést ^a Magestád	your Majesty
V. V ^e	Veneráble,	venerable
V. A.	Vuést ^a Altéza,	your Highness
V. E.	Vueceléncia,	your Excellency
V. G.	Verbi gratia,	for example
V. M.	Vuést ^a , mercéd, usted,	you
V. P.	Vuést ^a paternidád,	your paternity
V. S.	V. Señoría usía,	your Lordship
V. S. I.	Vuesenoría Ilustrísima,	your Lordship
Von	Vellón,	bullion
Vol.	Volúmen,	volume
X ^{no}	Diézmo,	tenth
Xp ^{to}	Chrístico	Christ
Xpt ^{no}	Christiáno,	Christian.

An Alphabetical List of WORDS, whose Orthography was formerly uncertain or dubious, but which now is fixed.

A.		Acérbo, ágrio ú áspero, sharp,
Abáxo, abaxár, &c. below, to	abate	four
Abovedár, to vault		Acervár, to heap up
Abrevár, abrevadéro, to water		Acivilár, to debase
Abreviár, to shorten		Acorvár, to curve, to crook
Abso ^l ver, to clear, to acquit		Adárve, the way upon a wall-
Abstrahér, to abstract		Adequár, adequádo, to make
Acañaveréar, to kill with darts		equal
Acéphalo, la, without head		A deshora, unseasonably
Acervo, monton, a heap		Adherír, adheréncia, &c. to
		adhere
		Adíva,

Adíva, ò adíve, *a kind of African dog*

Adívas, *a sort of quinsy in beasts*

Adivinár, adivíno, &c. *to fore-tell*

Adjetívo, *adjective*

Advenedízo, za, *outlandish*

Advenimiénto, *arrival, coming*

Adventício, *adventitious*

Advérbio, *adverb*

Advérso, adversidád, *adverse, adversity*

Advertír, advertído, *to advise*

Afloxár, *to loose*

Agavillár, *to bundle up*

Agravár, *to aggravate*

Agraviár, *to injure*

Agujéro, *a hole*

Agujeta, *a point*

Ah! *interjection, Ho!*

Amargár, *to make bitter*

Ahembrádo, da, *effeminate*

Aherrojár, *to bolt*

Aherrumbrárse, *to decay by rusting*

Ahi, *there*

Ahidalgádo, da, *gentlemanlike*

Ahijár, ahijádo, *to beget as a son*

Ahilárse, *to be starved*

Ahincár, *to thrust*

Ahitár, *to surfeit*

Ahogár, *to choke, to drown*

Ahombrádo, da, *manlike*

Ahondár, *to deepen, to dive*

Ahóra, *presently, now*

Ahorcár, *to hang*

Ahorcajárse, *to set astride*

Ahorcajadas, *straddling*

Ahormár, *to put upon the last*

Ahormagáse, *to be blasted by heat*

Ahornár, *to put in the oven*

Ahorquillár, *to put forks under a tree or plant*

Ahorrár, *to spare*

Ahoýár, *to dig holes*

Ahüecár, *to hollow*

Ahumár, *to smok*

Ahusár, *to shape as a spirit*

Ahuyentár, *to put to flight*

Albaháca, *sweet basil*

Alcaházár, *to put in a cage*

Alcaraván, *a heron, a bird*

Alcaravéa, *carraway-seed*

Alcohól, *antimony*

Alévè, *traitor*

Alfahár, *a potter's shop*

Alhája, *any furniture or jewel*

Alhamél, *a porter*

Alharáca, *an outcry*

Alhabéga, *majericon*

Alhacéna, *a cupboard*

Alhelî, *a gilliflower*

Alheña, *privet (a plant)*

Alhólva, *fenigreek*

Alsombra, *a carpet*

Alhórre, *a running-tide*

Alhuzéma, *lavender*

Aliquánta, *aliquant*

Aliquóta, *aliquot*

Alivíar, *to ease*

Alkérmes, *alkermis*

Almarráxa, *a glass bottle full of hair*

Almogaráves, *veterans*

Almoháda, *a pillow, a cushion*

Almohátre, *sublimated mercury*

Almoháza, *a curry-comb*

Almotazén, *a clerk of the market*

Almoxarife, almoxarifazgo, *receiver of duty, &c.*

Almoxáya, *a sort of measure*

Alóxa, *métheglin, or mead*

Alpha, *the first letter in Greek*

Eloquénste, *eloquent*

Altívo, va, *proud*

Alvérja, alvérjon, *a kind of peacock*

Amphisbéna, *a sort of serpent*
Recapitulácion

Recapitulación, a recapitulation
 Anáphora, a figure in rhetoric
 Anástropho, an inversion
 Anhelár, to desire with great vehemency
 Aniversário, anniversary
 Antechinos, plate chased
 Antever, to foresee
 Antipóphora, a figure in rhetoric
 Antibáchio, a measure in Latin verses
 Antiquádo, da, old, obsolete
 Antojéra, any thing put before the eyes
 Antuviár, to strike, to surprise
 Aovár, to lay eggs
 Aparvár, to make a heap
 Aphácas, vetches, tares
 Aphélio, Aphelion
 Apherésis, a figure in rhetoric
 Ahobachonádo, da, idle, lazy
 Apóphasis, apophasis
 Apóphisis, apophysis
 Apopléxia, apoplexy
 Aprehendér, &c. to conceive
 Aprovechár, to improve
 Aquadrillár, to conduct a squadron of soldiers
 Aquartelár, to quarter soldiers
 Aquatíl, living in the water
 Aquedúcto, an aqueduct
 Aquéo, watery
 Archivo, an archive
 Argaviéño, a stormy shower
 Aristolochia, hartswort (an herb)
 Arrexáque, a trident; also a bird
 Arvéxas, a sort of pease
 Asphálto, asphaltos
 Atahárre, a cupper
 Atahóna, a horse mill
 Atalvína, a sort of hasty pudding

Ataviár, to dress
 Atavillár, to fold together
 Atrahér, to attract
 Atrahillár, to drag in a slip
 Atravesár, to cross
 Atrevérse, to dare
 Avadárse, to become fordable
 Avahár, to warm one's hands by the breath
 Avalorár, to raise the value
 Avantál, an apron
 Adelánte, or mas lexos, farther
 Avanzár, to go forwards
 Aváro, covetous
 Avasallár, to subdue
 Ave, a bird
 Avechúco, an useless bird
 Avecinár, to come near
 Avccindárse, to inhabit
 Avellána, hazel-nut
 Avéna, oats
 Avenenár, to poison
 Aventajár, to exceed
 Aventár, to winnow
 Aventúra, adventure
 Avergonzár, to ashamed
 Avería, average
 Averiguár, to verify
 Averso, fa, averse
 Avestrúz, an ostrich
 Avezár, to use, inure
 Aviár, to make ready
 Avído, covetous
 Aviéso, fa, cross
 Avilantéz, boldness
 Avillanárse, to become low, mean
 Avinagrár, to grow sour
 Avion, a martlet (a bird)
 Avitár, to give notice
 Aviso, advise
 Avispár, to prick
 Avísipa, a wasp
 Avistár, to see at a distance
 Avitár, to fasten a cable
 Avituallár, to victual
 Avivár, to revive
 Avoléngo,

Avolénigo, *a grandfather's estate*

Avutárda, *a kind of heavy bird*

Axeréa, *winter savory*

Axedrés, *chefs*

Axénjos, *wormwood*

Axí, *a sort of pepper*

Axuár, *household furniture*

Azahár, *orange or lemon flower*

Azémila, *mule of baggage*

Azemíta, *bran bread*

Azíago, *unlucky*

Azolvár, *to obstruct*

B.

Baharú, *a goshawk*

Bahía, *a haven or bay*

Bahorrína, *a mean thing*

Bahúno, na, *mean, low*

Bahurréro, *a bird catcher*

Barahúnda, *tumult, confusion*

Barahustár, *to make way among weapons*

Baxél, *a vessel*

Baxío, *a shoal*

Baxár, &c. *to come down*

Baxón, *a bassoon*

Benévolo, la, *well affected*

Bienhadádo, *lucky*

Bogavánte, *the foreman in rowing*

Bohórdo, *rush*

Boqui hundído, *a mouth sunk in*

Boqui verde, *an idle talker*

Borráxa, *borage (an herb)*

Bovéda, *a vault*

Bovíno, na, *of oxen*

Boxédal, *a grove of box-trees*

Brávo, va, *brave*

Bréva, *an early fig*

Bréve, *short*

Brúxula, *sea compass*

Buhédo, buhedár, *a hog*

Buhéra, *a loop-hole*

Buho, *an owl*

Buhonería, *toys*

Buxéda, *a grove of box trees*

Buxerías, *toys*

Buxéta, *a small perfume-box*

C.

Cadahálfo, *a scaffold*

Cadavér, *a corpse*

Cahíz, *a sort of measure*

Calavéra, *a skull*

Cálvo, va, *bald*

Cañahéja, *a cloven cane*

Cañavéra, *a reed*

Caravána, *a caravan*

Carcáva, *a grave, a great*

Carvi, *carraway-seed*

Cavilár, *to cavil*

Caxa, axón, *a box*

Cerrójo, *a bolt*

Cervíz, *the neck*

Chérva, *the herb sperage*

Chímia, *Chemistry*

Chirágra, *the gout in the hands*

Chirivía, *the root skirra*

Chiromancia, *foretelling by the hands*

Chóva, *a jack daw*

Chrísma, *chrism*

Ciérvó, *a deer*

Circunvalár, *to entrench round*

Circunvecíno, na, *neighbouring*

Civil, *civil, courteous*

Cláve, *harpsichord*

Clavél, *gilliflower*

Clavicórdio, *a spinnet*

Clavíja, *a wooden pin*

Clávo, *a nail*

Coacervár, *to heap up*

Cohéchar, *to bribe*

Coheredéro,

Coheredéro, *co-heir*
 Cohéte, *a squib, a cracker*
 Cohól, *a kind of mineral*
 Coliquár, *to liquify*
 Comprehender, *to comprehend*
 Concavo, *concave*
 Confuélo, *comfort*
 Conjetúra, *conjecture*
 Conveniência, *convenience*
 Consequência, *consequence*
 Conservár, *to preserve*
 Contrahacér, *to counterfeit*
 Contrahér, *to contract*
 Contravalár, *to entrench round*
 Contravenír, *to transgress*
 Contravéros, *scalloped garments*
 Controvertír, *to controvert*
 Convalecér, *to recover*
 Convecíno, *neighbouring*
 Convencér, *to persuade*
 Convenír, *to agree*
 Conversár, *to converse*
 Convertír, *to alter, to change*
 Convocár, *to assemble*
 Convulsíon, *convulsion*
 Corcóva, *crookedness*
 Corvejón, *the joint of the foot of a beast*
 Corvéta, *the curvet of a horse*
 Corvíllo, *a little crow*
 Corvína, *a kind of sea-fish*
 Covácha, *a little cave*
 Covachuéla, *the office of a secretary of state*
 Coxín, *cushion*
 Cóxo, xa, *halting*
 Cuéva, *a cave or den*
 Cultivár, *to cultivate*
 Cúrvas, *crooked timber*
 Cúrvo, va, *crooked*

D.

Dadíva, *present*
 Dedicación, *dedication*

Dehésa, *pasture-ground*
 Delinquénte, *malefactor*
 Depravár, *to spoil*
 Derivár, *to derive*
 Desahogár, *to clear*
 Desahuciár, *to give over*
 Desaviár, *to lead out of the way*
 Desavenír, *to disagree*
 Desemparvár, *to gather into heaps*
 Deshabituár, *to lose a custom*
 Desfacér, *to undo*
 Desharrapádo, da, *ragged*
 Deshebrár, *to draw the threads out*
 Deshelár, *to thaw*
 Deshinchár, *to unswell*
 Deshonésto, ta, *indecent*
 Deshonór, *dishonour*
 Deshónra, *dishonour*
 Desnervár, *to cut off the nerves*
 Desovár, *to spawn*
 Despavelár, *to snuff the candles*
 Despavorído, da, *frighten*
 Desquaternár, *to unbind*
 Desquartizár, *to quarter*
 Desquixár, *to tear the jaws*
 Desservír, *to deserve*
 Desválido, da, *unassisted*
 Desván, *a garret*
 Desvanecér, *to puff up with pride*
 Desvarár, *to slide*
 Desvariár, *to rave*
 Desvelár, *to over-watch*
 Desvenár, *to cut the veins*
 Desventúra, *misfortune*
 Desvergüénza, *impudence*
 Desviár, *to set aside*
 Devanár, *to wind thread, &c.*
 Devantál, *an apron*
 Devastár, *to make thin*
 Devorár, *to devour*
 Devóto,

Devóto, ta,	pious, devout
Dexár,	to leave
Dibuxár,	to draw
Dilúvio,	deluge
Disolvér,	to dissolve
Distrabér,	to distract
Diván,	divan
Divergente,	divergent
Divérso,	divers, several
Divertír,	to divert
Dividír,	to divide
Diviéso,	a tumour
Divíno, na,	divine
Divísár,	to see at a distance
Divórcio,	divorce
Divulgár,	to publish
Díxés,	jewels
Dovélas,	the upper stones of an arch
Dozávo,	twelfth.

E.

Elevár,	to elevate
Eloqüente,	eloquent
Embaxáda,	embassy
Embermejecér,	to make red
Embravecérse,	to grow fierce
Emmohecérse,	to grow mouldy
Empavefár,	to make ready for fighting
Empolvorár, empolvorizár,	to cast dust on a thing
Encaxár,	to fix, or thrust
Encaxonár,	to put in a box
Enclavijár,	to fasten with pins
Encohetár,	to fill with squibs
Encorvár,	to crook, or curb
Encovár,	to put in a cave
Encoxádo,	grown lame
Enervár,	to enervate
Engavillár,	to bind up
Enhastár,	to put a spear
Enhastíar,	to cause loathing
Enhebrár,	to thread
Enhestár,	to rear up

Enhilár,	to thread
Enhocár,	to hollow
Enhornár,	to set in the oven
Enquaternár,	to bind
Emchojár,	to roll wax in leaven
Enroxécer,	to grow red
Entreverár,	to intermix
Entroxár,	to gather in a barn
Envaynár,	to put into the scab. bard
Envarár,	to make stiff
Envasár,	to put in a vessel
Envejecér,	to grow old
Envenenár,	to poison
Envestír,	to invest
Enviciárse,	to take an ill habit
Envidiár,	to envy
Envilecér,	to make vile, mean
Envinár,	to mix wine
Envizcár,	to lay bird-lime
Envolvér,	to pack up
Enviudár,	to be a widow
Enxavonar,	to soap linen, &c.
Enxálma,	a pannel
Enxambré,	a swarm of bees
Enxerír,	to graft
Enxugár,	to dry
Enxúndia,	the fat of a hen
Equéstre,	equestrian
Equívoco, ca,	equivocal
Esclávo,	a slave
Esparaván,	a heron (a bird)
Esparavél,	a sort of net
Esquádra,	a squadron
Esquívo, va,	disdainful
Estéva,	the plough-band:
Evacuár,	to evacuate
Evaporár,	to evaporate
Evidénte,	evident
Evitár,	to avoid
Excavár,	to dig
Executár,	to execute
Exercér,	to exercise
Exército,	an army
Exháusto, ta,	drained

Exhibir,

Exhibír, *to shew*
Exhortár, *to exhort*
Exído, *a ground out of a town*
Extraviárse, *to go out of the way*

F.

Favór, *favour*
Faxár, *to swathe*
Fervór, *fervour*
Fixár, *to fix*
Fléxes, *bows*
Floxedád, *looseness*
Flúxo, *flux*

G.

Gallipávo, *a turkey-cock*
Gaváncó, *dog-briar*
Gavéta, *a draw*
Gavía, *the round top of a mast*
Gavilán, *a sparrow-hawk*
Gavílla, *a faggot*
Gavíon, *a hand-barrow*
Gavióta, *a sea-gull*
Gazéla, *a wild goat*
Gravár, *to engrave*
Gravedád, *gravity*

H.

Haba, *a bean*
Habil, *able, apt, learned*
Habitár, *to dwell*
Hablár, *to speak*
Haca, hacanéa, *a nag, or gelding*
Hacer, *to make*
Hacha, *an axe, or hatchet*
Haciénda, *a country house*
Hacina, *a stack of wood, or corn*
Hado, *fate*
Haíz, *the state of a planet*
Halagár, *to cherish, or flatter*

Halcón, *a falcon*
Hálda, *the skirt of a garment, &c.*

Halcéto, *an osprey*
Hálito, *breathing*
Hallár, *to find*
Hallúllo, *bread baked under the ashes*

Hamáca, *a hammock*
Hám-bre, *hunger, famine*
Hamézes, *a disease in hawks*
Hámpa, *a quarrel of bad people*

Hampón, na, *puffed up*
Hanéga, *a bushel*
Ho! *(interjection) halas!*

Harápos, *rags, clouts*
Harbár, *to do in haste*
Hardaleár, *to skip*
Haríja, *dust of meal*
Harína, *flour, meal*
Harmonía, *harmony*
Harnéro, *a sieve with small holes*

Harón, na, *a lazy person*
Hárpa, *a harp*
Harpár, *to cut the face*
Harpéo, *a drag*
Harpilléra, *a coarse cloth*
Harripiézo, *a rag hanging*
Harrear, *to drive beasts*
Hartár, *to satisfy with food*
Hasta, *a spear or pike*
Hastiál, *the inside wall of a vault*

Hástio, *a loathing*
Hato, *a flock, a herd*
Haya, *a hedge*
Haza, *a sowed field*
Hazína, *a miser*
Hebílla, *a buckle*
Hebilláge, *a set of buckles*
Hebra, *a needle full of thread*

Hechizar, *to enchant*
Hechúra, *fashion*

Hedér,

Hedér,	<i>to stink</i>	Hóbacho,	<i>a great jaile</i>
Helár,	<i>to freeze</i>	Hocíco,	<i>the snout</i>
Helioscópio,	<i>a kind of spurge</i>	Hocíno,	<i>a hook to lop trees</i>
Hembra,	<i>a female</i>	Hogáza,	<i>a quartern loaf</i>
Hemistíchio,	<i>a half verse</i>	Hoguéra,	<i>a bonfire</i>
Henchír,	<i>to fill</i>	Hója,	<i>a leaf of a tree, &c.</i>
Heno,	<i>hay</i>	Hojáldre,	<i>puff-paste</i>
Heñír,	<i>to knead dough</i>	Holgárse,	<i>to be merry</i>
Herbáge,	<i>grass, pasture</i>	Hollár,	<i>to trample</i>
Herbáto ù herbátu,	<i>hog-fennel</i>	Holléjo,	<i>the husk of grapes, &c.</i>
Herbolário,	<i>an herbal or botanist</i>	Hollin,	<i>foot</i>
Heredád,	<i>inheritance</i>	Hómbre,	<i>a man</i>
Herír,	<i>to wound, or hurt</i>	Hómbro,	<i>shoulder</i>
Hermáno,	<i>brother</i>	Homenáge,	<i>homage</i>
Herpés,	<i>the shingles</i>	Homicída,	<i>murderer</i>
Herráda,	<i>a bucket</i>	Hónnda,	<i>a sling to cast stones</i>
Herramiénta,	<i>iron tools</i>	Hóndo,	<i>deep</i>
Herréte,	<i>a tag of a point, &c.</i>	Honestidád,	<i>honesty</i>
Hervír,	<i>to boil</i>	Hónor, hónra,	<i>honour</i>
Hético,	<i>consumptive</i>	Hopa ù hopalánda,	<i>a sort of tunic</i>
Héz,	<i>dregs of oil, wine, &c.</i>	Hopeár,	<i>to wag the tail</i>
Hibiérno,	<i>winter</i>	Hóque,	<i>bride</i>
Hidálgo,	<i>gentleman</i>	Hóra,	<i>hour</i>
Hydropésia,	<i>dropsy</i>	Horadár,	<i>to pierce, to bore</i>
Hiél,	<i>the gall</i>	Horca,	<i>a fork, a gallows</i>
Hiérro,	<i>iron</i>	Horcate,	<i>a fork with two prongs</i>
Higado,	<i>the liver</i>	Hordiáte,	<i>barley-broth</i>
Híjo, ja,	<i>son</i>	Hórma,	<i>a shoemaker's shop</i>
Híla, hilácha,	<i>a lint</i>	Hormíga,	<i>an ant, a pest</i>
Hiléra,	<i>a rank</i>	Hormígo,	<i>a sort of mejs</i>
Hilandéra,	<i>a spinster</i>	Hórno,	<i>an oven</i>
Hilár,	<i>to spin</i>	Horréndo, da,	<i>horrible</i>
Hincár,	<i>to fasten</i>	Hórro,	<i>free</i>
Hinchár,	<i>to swell</i>	Horrór,	<i>terror</i>
Híncha,	<i>hatred</i>	Horteláno,	<i>gardener</i>
Hiniésta,	<i>broom</i>	Hospitál,	<i>hospital</i>
Hinójo,	<i>fennel</i>	Hoslería,	<i>an inn</i>
Hipár,	<i>to hickup</i>	Hostígar,	<i>to drive away</i>
Hypocondría,	<i>hypocondry</i>	Hostilidád,	<i>hostility</i>
Hipotéca,	<i>a mortgage</i>	Hóyo,	<i>a hole in the earth</i>
Hírco,	<i>a he-goat</i>	Hozár,	<i>to grub</i>
Hispanísma,	<i>Hispanism</i>	Húcha,	<i>a box with a joint</i>
Histérico, ca,	<i>histerical</i>	Huebrár,	<i>to plough the land</i>
História,	<i>history</i>	Huéco,	<i>hollow</i>
Hito, ta,	<i>black-haired</i>	Huelfágo,	

Huelfágo,	<i>a sickness in birds</i>
Huella,	<i>the track</i>
Huenco,	<i>a bier</i>
Huero, ra,	<i>addle as an egg</i>
Huérfano, na,	<i>orphan</i>
Huéra, huerto,	<i>an orchard</i>
Hufo,	<i>a bone</i>
Huésped,	<i>an host, or guest</i>
Huélte,	<i>an army</i>
Huevo,	<i>an egg</i>
Huir,	<i>to fly</i>
Hule,	<i>burnished linen</i>
Humano, na,	<i>human</i>
Húmedo, da,	<i>damp</i>
Humilde,	<i>humble</i>
Humo,	<i>smoak</i>
Humór,	<i>humour, temper</i>
Hundir,	<i>to sink</i>
Hura,	<i>a sort of scurf</i>
Huracán,	<i>a storm</i>
Huráño, ña,	<i>coy, disdainful</i>
Hurgár,	<i>to stir</i>
Hurón,	<i>a ferret</i>
Hurtár,	<i>to steal</i>
Húfo,	<i>a spindle</i>
Hutía,	<i>a kind of rabbit</i>

I. J.

Inadvertencia,	<i>inadvertency</i>
Inconsequente,	<i>inconsequent</i>
Inconvencible,	<i>tenacious, or obstinated in his opinion</i>
Indevoto,	<i>irreligious</i>
Indivisible,	<i>indivisible</i>
Inhabíl	<i>incapable</i>
Inherente,	<i>inherent</i>
Inhibir,	<i>to forbid</i>
Iniquo, qua,	<i>unjust</i>
Innavegable,	<i>innavigable</i>
Innovár,	<i>to innovate</i>
Interválo,	<i>an interval</i>
Intervenir,	<i>to intervene</i>
Invadir,	<i>to invade</i>
Invalidár,	<i>to invalidate</i>
Invectiva,	<i>an invective</i>

Inventár,	<i>to find out</i>
Inventário,	<i>inventory</i>
Invertir,	<i>to invert</i>
Investigár,	<i>to look out</i>
Investir,	<i>to invest</i>
Inveterádo,	<i>inveterate</i>
Invioládo,	<i>inviolable</i>
Invocar,	<i>to call upon</i>
Invulneráble,	<i>invulnerable</i>
Inxerir,	<i>to graft</i>
Ingerirse,	<i>to meddle with</i>
Jaharrár,	<i>to plaister</i>
Juventúd,	<i>youth</i>
Joviál,	<i>gay, merry</i>
Judihuéla,	<i>a sort of bean</i>

L.

Lavándula,	<i>lavender</i>
Lavár,	<i>to wash</i>
Láza,	<i>a lash for dogs</i>
Léva,	<i>raising of bad people who are without employment, sol- diers</i>
Levantár,	<i>to raise</i>
Levánte,	<i>the East</i>
Léve,	<i>light</i>
Lexía,	<i>lye to wash</i>
Liviáno, na,	<i>light, inconstant</i>
Lixa,	<i>the skin of the seal-fish</i>
Lláve,	<i>a key</i>
Llevár,	<i>to carry</i>
Llover,	<i>to rain</i>

M.

Madéxa,	<i>a skain of thread, &c.</i>
Mahóna,	<i>a sort of galley</i>
Malévolo, la,	<i>ill-affected</i>
Malhechór,	<i>malefactor</i>
Malva,	<i>mallows</i>
Malvádo, da,	<i>wicked</i>
Matalahúga,	<i>anise (an herb)</i>
Mohatrár,	<i>to sell above price, and buy under</i>
Mohíno, na,	<i>peevish</i>

Móho,

Hedér,	<i>to stink</i>	Hóbacho,	<i>a great jade</i>
Helár,	<i>to freeze</i>	Hocíco,	<i>the snout</i>
Helioscópio,	<i>a kind of spurge</i>	Hocíno,	<i>a hook to loptress</i>
Hémбра,	<i>a female</i>	Hogáza,	<i>a quartern loaf</i>
Hemistíchio,	<i>a half verse</i>	Hoguéra,	<i>a bonfire</i>
Henchír,	<i>to fill</i>	Hója,	<i>a leaf of a tree, &c.</i>
Heno,	<i>hay</i>	Hojáldre,	<i>puff-paste</i>
Heñír,	<i>to knead dough</i>	Holgárse,	<i>to be merry</i>
Herbáge,	<i>grass, pasture</i>	Hollár,	<i>to trample</i>
Herbáto ù herbátu,	<i>hog-fennel</i>	Holléjo,	<i>the husk of grapes, &c.</i>
Herbolário,	<i>an herbal or botanist</i>	Hollin,	<i>foot</i>
Heredád,	<i>inheritance</i>	Hómbre,	<i>a man</i>
Herír,	<i>to wound, or hurt</i>	Hómbro,	<i>shoulder</i>
Hermáno,	<i>brother</i>	Homenáge,	<i>homage</i>
Herpés,	<i>the shingles</i>	Homicída,	<i>murderer</i>
Herráda,	<i>a bucket</i>	Hónda,	<i>a sling to cast stones</i>
Herramiénta,	<i>iron tools</i>	Hóndo,	<i>deep</i>
Herréte,	<i>a tag of a point, &c.</i>	Honestidád,	<i>honesty</i>
Hervír,	<i>to boil</i>	Hónor, hónra,	<i>honour</i>
Hético,	<i>consumptive</i>	Hopa ù hopalánda,	<i>a sort of tunic</i>
Héz,	<i>dregs of oil, wine, &c.</i>	Hopeár,	<i>to wag the tail</i>
Hibiérno,	<i>winter</i>	Hóque,	<i>bride</i>
Hidálgo,	<i>gentleman</i>	Hóra,	<i>hour</i>
Hydropésia,	<i>dropsy</i>	Horadár,	<i>to pierce, to bore</i>
Hiél,	<i>the gall</i>	Horca,	<i>a fork, a gallus</i>
Hierro,	<i>iron</i>	Horcate,	<i>a fork with two prongs</i>
Higado,	<i>the liver</i>	Hordiáte,	<i>barley-broth</i>
Híjo, ja,	<i>son</i>	Hórma,	<i>a shoemaker's slag</i>
Híla, hilácha,	<i>a lint</i>	Hormíga,	<i>an ant, a pismire</i>
Hiléra,	<i>a rank</i>	Hormígo,	<i>a sort of mejs</i>
Hilandéra,	<i>a spinster</i>	Hórno,	<i>an oven</i>
Hilár,	<i>to spin</i>	Horréndo, da,	<i>horrible</i>
Hincár,	<i>to fasten</i>	Hórro,	<i>free</i>
Hinchár,	<i>to swell</i>	Horrór,	<i>terror</i>
Híncha,	<i>hatred</i>	Horteláno,	<i>gardener</i>
Hiniésta,	<i>broom</i>	Hospitál,	<i>hospital</i>
Hinójo,	<i>fennel</i>	Hostería,	<i>an inn</i>
Hipár,	<i>to hickup</i>	Hostigár,	<i>to drive away</i>
Hypocondría,	<i>hypochondry</i>	Hostilidad,	<i>hostility</i>
Hipotéca,	<i>a mortgage</i>	Hóyo,	<i>a hole in the earth</i>
Hírco,	<i>a he-goat</i>	Hozár,	<i>to grub</i>
Hispanísimo,	<i>Hispanism</i>	Húcha,	<i>a box with a jar</i>
Histérico, ca,	<i>histerical</i>	Huebrár,	<i>to plough the land</i>
Hittéria,	<i>history</i>	Huéco,	<i>hollow</i>
Hito, ta,	<i>black-haired</i>	Huellégo,	

Huelfágo,	<i>a sickness in birds</i>	Inventár,	<i>to find out</i>
Huella,	<i>the track</i>	Inventáreo,	<i>inventory</i>
Huico,	<i>a bier</i>	Invertir,	<i>to invert</i>
Huero, ra,	<i>addle as an egg</i>	Investigár,	<i>to look out</i>
Huérfano, na,	<i>orphan</i>	Investir,	<i>to invest</i>
Huéra, huerto,	<i>an orchard</i>	Inveterádo,	<i>inveterate</i>
Hueso,	<i>a bone</i>	Invioládo,	<i>inviolable</i>
Húesped,	<i>an host, or guest</i>	Invocár,	<i>to call upon</i>
Huéspe,	<i>an army</i>	Invulneráble,	<i>invulnerable</i>
Huevo,	<i>an egg</i>	Inxerir,	<i>to graft</i>
Huir,	<i>to fly</i>	Ingerirse,	<i>to meddle with</i>
Hule,	<i>burnished linen</i>	Jaharrár,	<i>to plaister</i>
Humano, na,	<i>human</i>	Juventúd,	<i>youth</i>
Húmedo, da,	<i>damp</i>	Joviál,	<i>gay, merry</i>
Humilde,	<i>humble</i>	Judihuéla,	<i>a sort of bean</i>
Húmo,	<i>smoak</i>		
Humór,	<i>humour, temper</i>		
Hundir,	<i>to sink</i>		
Hura,	<i>a sort of scurf</i>		
Huracán,	<i>a storm</i>		
Huráño, ña,	<i>coy, disdainful</i>		
Hurgár,	<i>to stir</i>		
Hurón,	<i>a ferret</i>		
Hurtár,	<i>to steal</i>		
Húso,	<i>a spindle</i>		
Hutía,	<i>a kind of rabbit</i>		

I. J.

Inadvertencia,	<i>inadvertency</i>
Inconsequente,	<i>inconsequent</i>
Inconvencible,	<i>tenacious, or obstinate in his opinion</i>
Indevoto,	<i>irreligious</i>
Indivisible,	<i>indivisible</i>
Inhabíl	<i>incapable</i>
Inherente,	<i>inherent</i>
Inhibir,	<i>to forbid</i>
Iniquo, qua,	<i>unjust</i>
Innavigable,	<i>innavigable</i>
Innovár,	<i>to innovate</i>
Interválo,	<i>an interval</i>
Intervenir,	<i>to intervene</i>
Invadir,	<i>to invade</i>
Invalidár,	<i>to invalidate</i>
Invectiva,	<i>an invective</i>

L.

Lavándula,	<i>lavender</i>
Lavár,	<i>to wash</i>
Láza,	<i>a lash for dogs</i>
Léva,	<i>raising of bad people who are without employment, sol- diers</i>
Levantár,	<i>to raise</i>
Levante,	<i>the East</i>
Léve,	<i>light</i>
Lexía,	<i>lye to wash</i>
Liviáno, na,	<i>light, inconstant</i>
Lixa,	<i>the skin of the seal-fish</i>
Llave,	<i>a key</i>
Llevár,	<i>to carry</i>
Llover,	<i>to rain</i>

M.

Madéxa,	<i>a skain of thread, &c.</i>
Mahóna,	<i>a sort of galley</i>
Malévolo, la,	<i>ill-affected</i>
Malhechór,	<i>malefactor</i>
Malva,	<i>mallows</i>
Malvado, da,	<i>wicked</i>
Matalahúga,	<i>anise (an herb)</i>
Mohatrár,	<i>to sell above price, and buy under</i>
Mohino, na,	<i>peevish</i>

Móho,

R.

Rebáxa,	<i>abating</i>
Rebelár,	<i>to rebel</i>
Reconvenír,	<i>to expose</i>
Rehacer,	<i>to make again</i>
Rehen,	<i>hostage</i>
Rehanchír,	<i>to fill again</i>
Renundír,	<i>to sink again</i>
Rehufár,	<i>to refuse</i>
Rejuvenecer,	<i>to grow younger</i>
Relaxár,	<i>to relax</i>
Relevár,	<i>to raise up</i>
Remover,	<i>to remove</i>
Renovár,	<i>to renew</i>
Reservár,	<i>to reserve</i>
Resolver,	<i>to resolve</i>
Revelar,	<i>to reveal</i>
Revender,	<i>to sell again</i>
Reventár,	<i>to burst</i>
Revér,	<i>to revise</i>
Reverberár,	<i>to reflect</i>
Reverdecer,	<i>to grow green</i> <i>again</i>
Revérso, sa,	<i>reverse</i>
Revés,	<i>the wrong side</i>
Revestír,	<i>to cloath</i>
Revezár,	<i>to take turns</i>
Revivír,	<i>to revive</i>
Revocar,	<i>to recall</i>
Revolcarse,	<i>to turn oneself</i>
Revolvér,	<i>to make noise</i>
Rezelár,	<i>to suspect</i>
Rivál,	<i>rival</i>
Ropavejero,	<i>old cloth broker</i>

S.

Saliva,	<i>spittle</i>
Salvado,	<i>bran of meal</i>
Salvaje,	<i>savage, wild</i>
Salvaguárdia,	<i>a safeguard</i>
Sálvia,	<i>sage (an herb)</i>
Salvar,	<i>to save</i>
Selva,	<i>a forest</i>
Sequestrar,	<i>to sequester</i>
Servilletá,	<i>a napkin</i>

Sevéro, ra,	<i>severe</i>
Siervo,	<i>a servant</i>
Silvestre,	<i>wild</i>
Sobre ház,	<i>the superficies</i>
Sobre huésto,	<i>a splint in a horse</i>
Sobre llevar,	<i>to endure</i>
Sobre venir,	<i>to happen</i>
Socavár,	<i>to undermine</i>
Suáve,	<i>mild</i>
Sublevár,	<i>to raise up</i>
Subseguente,	<i>subsequent</i>
Sujetár,	<i>to subject</i>

T.

Tahalí,	<i>a shoulder-belt</i>
Tahóna,	<i>a horse-mill</i>
Tahúlla,	<i>a pecc of ground</i>
Tahúr,	<i>a sh. ber</i>
Talvína,	<i>a hasty pudding</i>
Taravilla,	<i>the clacker of a</i> <i>mill</i>
Tergiversár,	<i>to evade</i>
Texér,	<i>to weave</i>
Tixéras,	<i>scissars</i>
Todavía,	<i>yet</i>
Traher,	<i>to bring</i>
Tráhilla,	<i>a slip for a dog</i>
Trasoguéro,	<i>the back of a</i> <i>chimney</i>
Trasvenarse,	<i>to come out of</i> <i>the veins</i>
Traviéso, sa,	<i>wanton</i>
Troxé ò trox,	<i>a granary</i>

U.

Universidad,	<i>university</i>
Uva,	<i>grape</i>

V.

Vaca,	<i>a cow</i>
Vacilar,	<i>to waver</i>
Vacio,	<i>empty</i>
Vado,	<i>a ford in a river</i>
Valle,	<i>valley</i>

K

Vale,

Vale,	<i>farewel</i>	Vencér,	<i>to conquer</i>
Valér,	<i>to be worth</i>	Venda,	<i>a fillet</i>
Valerófo, fa,	<i>courageous</i>	Vendér,	<i>to sell</i>
Válido,	<i>favourite</i>	Vendímia,	<i>the vintage</i>
Valiente,	<i>full of spirit</i>	Venénó,	<i>poison, venom</i>
Valíza,	<i>a portmanteau</i>	Venerár,	<i>to respect</i>
Valór,	<i>value</i>	Vengár,	<i>to revenge</i>
Vanguárdia,	<i>the vanguard</i>	Vénia,	<i>leave, licence</i>
Váno, na,	<i>vain</i>	Venír,	<i>to come</i>
Vapór,	<i>vapour</i>	Vénta,	<i>an inn</i>
Vára,	<i>a yard</i>	Ventája,	<i>advantage</i>
Variár,	<i>to vary</i>	Ventána,	<i>a window</i>
Varón,	<i>a man</i>	Vencár,	<i>to blow</i>
Vafiálo,	<i>a subject</i>	Ventíſca,	<i>a blust of wind</i>
Vafo,	<i>a veſſel, a glaſs</i>	Ventór,	<i>a blood-hound</i>
Vaftágo, the ſtock of a vine, &c.		Ventóſa,	<i>a cupping-glaſs</i>
Vaſto, ta,	<i>dilated</i>	Ventóſo,	<i>windy</i>
Vaticinár,	<i>to foretel</i>	Ventrículo,	<i>ventricle</i>
Vaxílla, a cupboard with plate		Ventrúdo,	<i>great-bellied</i>
Vaya,	<i>joking</i>	Ventúra,	<i>luck</i>
Vayna,	<i>ſcabbard</i>	Venturína,	<i>a venturine, (a ſtone)</i>
Vecíno, na,	<i>neighbour</i>	Vér,	<i>to ſee</i>
Vedár,	<i>to forbid</i>	Véra,	<i>a large plain</i>
Vedéja,	<i>a lock of hair</i>	Veráno,	<i>ſummer</i>
Veduño,	<i>the ground of a vineyard</i>	Veráz,	<i>a man who always ſpeaks the truth</i>
Veedór,	<i>an overſeer</i>	Verbáſco,	<i>great lungwort (an herb)</i>
Vega,	<i>a paſture-ground by a river</i>	Verbéna,	<i>vervein (an herb)</i>
Veheménte,	<i>vehement</i>	Verdád,	<i>truth</i>
Vehículo,	<i>vehicle</i>	Vérde,	<i>green</i>
Veínte,	<i>twenty</i>	Verdúgo,	<i>the hangman</i>
Vejéz,	<i>old age</i>	Veréda,	<i>a path-way</i>
Vela,	<i>a ſail</i>	Vérgea,	<i>a yard</i>
Veléſa,	<i>toothwort</i>	Vergél,	<i>a garden</i>
Vello,	<i>down</i>	Vergüénza,	<i>ſhame</i>
Vellocíno,	<i>a fleece</i>	Verídico, ca,	<i>true</i>
Villón,	<i>a cloth of the wool's colour</i>	Verificár,	<i>to verify</i>
Veiloríta,	<i>creſſis (an herb)</i>	Veriſimíl,	<i>likely</i>
Vellófo, fa,	<i>dowry</i>	Verónica,	<i>ſtuellin (an herb)</i>
Velón,	<i>a braſs lamp</i>	Veros,	<i>a weavy ornament</i>
Velóz,	<i>light</i>	Verrúga,	<i>a wart</i>
Vena,	<i>a vein</i>	Verſádo,	<i>verſed</i>
Venáblo,	<i>a javelin</i>	Verſos,	<i>verſes</i>
Venado,	<i>a deer</i>	Vértebra,	<i>vertebre</i>
Venajo,	<i>a martlet (a bird)</i>	Vetér,	<i>to ſpill</i>

Vertigo,	<i>giddiness</i>	Vitela,	<i>parchment</i>
Vestigio,	<i>a track</i>	Vitrificar,	<i>to vitrify</i>
Vestir,	<i>to cloath, to dress</i>	Vitriolo,	<i>vitriol</i>
Veterano,	<i>veteran</i>	Vitualla,	<i>viñuals, provisions</i>
Vexar,	<i>to vex, to trouble</i>	Vituperar,	<i>to reproach</i>
Vexiga,	<i>a bladder</i>	Viduo,	<i>a widower</i>
Viage,	<i>journey</i>	Vivandero,	<i>a sutler to an army</i>
Vianda,	<i>food</i>	Vivar,	<i>a coney-warren</i>
Víbora,	<i>a viper</i>	Viveza,	<i>sprightliness</i>
Vibrar,	<i>to brandish</i>	Vivir,	<i>to live</i>
Vicario,	<i>a vicar</i>	Vizconde,	<i>a Viscount</i>
Vicio,	<i>vice</i>	Vocablo,	<i>a word</i>
Vicistud,	<i>a change</i>	Vocacion,	<i>a vocation</i>
Victima,	<i>a victim</i>	Vocear,	<i>to cry out</i>
Victorear,	<i>to applaud</i>	Volar,	<i>to fly</i>
Vid,	<i>a vine</i>	Volcan,	<i>a burning mountain</i>
Vida,	<i>life</i>	Voltear,	<i>to tumble</i>
Vidrio,	<i>a glass</i>	Voluble,	<i>voluble</i>
Viés,	<i>old</i>	Voluntad,	<i>will or affection</i>
Viente,	<i>belly</i>	Volver,	<i>to turn or return</i>
Viernes,	<i>Friday</i>	Vomitár,	<i>to vomit</i>
Vigilar,	<i>to watch</i>	Voraz,	<i>greedy</i>
Vigor,	<i>vigour, force</i>	Votar,	<i>to vote or to vow</i>
Vihuela,	<i>a lute</i>	Voz,	<i>a voice or word</i>
Vilipendiár,	<i>to despise</i>	Vuelta,	<i>turn</i>
Villá,	<i>a town</i>	Vulnerar,	<i>to hurt or wound</i>
Vinagre,	<i>vinegar</i>		
Vínculo,	<i>a tie, a binding</i>		
Vindicar,	<i>to revenge</i>		
Vino,	<i>wine</i>		
Vina,	<i>vine</i>		
Violín,	<i>a fiddle</i>		
Violar,	<i>to violate</i>		
Violento, ta,	<i>violent</i>		
Violeta,	<i>a violet</i>		
Viperino, na,	<i>of a viper</i>		
Virgen,	<i>virgin</i>		
Virtud,	<i>virtue</i>		
Viruela,	<i>small-pox</i>		
Viruta,	<i>a chip</i>		
Visage,	<i>distortion of the face</i>		
Viscosidad,	<i>clamminess</i>		
Visitar,	<i>to visit</i>		
Vilumbre,	<i>a blazing light</i>		
Viso,	<i>glimmering appearance</i>		
Víspera,	<i>the eve of a day</i>		
Vista,	<i>sight, prospect</i>		

X.

Xabéque,	<i>a xebeck (a sort of ship)</i>
Xabón,	<i>soap</i>
Xácara,	<i>a sort of song</i>
Xaco,	<i>a coat of mail</i>
Xalma,	<i>a pack-saddle</i>
Xalóque,	<i>the south-west wind</i>
Xamúga,	<i>a side-saddle for women</i>
Xaque,	<i>a check at chess</i>
Xaquéca,	<i>head-ach on one side</i>
Xaquél,	<i>a chequer</i>
Xáquima,	<i>a halter for a beast</i>
Xarábe,	<i>a syrup</i>
Xaramágo,	<i>wild rape</i>
Xárcias,	<i>the rigging of a ship</i>
Xérge,	<i>a sort of sackcloth</i>
Xerínga,	

Xerínga,

a syringe

Xíbia,

the cuttle-fish

Xícara,

a dish for chocolate

Xilguéro,

a sort of bird

Xúgo,

juice

Y.

Yérmos,

bitter tares

Zahondár,

to sink to the bottem

Zahorí,

a sort of foreteller

Zahúrda,

an hog-slye

Zanahória,

a carrot

Zélo,

zeal

Zélos,

jealousy

Ziñáza,

discovery

THE
ELEMENTS
OF THE
SPANISH GRAMMAR.

PART II.

CHAP. I.

Of SYNTAX.

THE SYNTAX, or CONSTRUCTION is the order of words in a sentence, which is composed of the nine parts of speech, or of some of them, *viz.* of the

ARTICLE,
NOUN,
PRONOUN,
VERB,
PARTICIPLE,

ADVERB,
CONJUNCTION,
PREPOSITION,
INTERJECTION.

The essential parts of a sentence are, a Nominative and a Verb ; because in speaking something is always said of another ; as, Man is mortal, *El hombre es mortal* ; where you may see, it is said of man that he is mortal.

Order of the Spanish Construction in Affirmative Phrases.

1. The oblique cases, *me, te, le, or la, nos, vos, les, or las,* are placed either before or after the Verb.

K 3

Example.

Example.—*Pedro me ama, or áma me Pedro*, Peter loves me.

2. The sentence begins either with the Nominative or with the Verb : and, when the Pronoun Personal is the Nominative, it may be omitted.

Example.—*Está malo mi hermano, fué al campo*, My brother is sick ; he is gone to the country.

3. The Adverb is placed either before or after the Verb ; but, when before, then the oblique case must be put before the Verb.

Example.—*Tíernamente me quiere mi padre*, My father loves me tenderly.

In Negative Phrases.

The Negation must be placed before the oblique cases, and both of them before the Verbs.

Example. *No me escribe mi amigo*, My friend does not write to me.

In Interrogative Phrases with or without a Negation.

The Nominative must be put immediately after the Verb.

Example.—*Está mi hermano en casa ?* Is my brother at home ? *No me quiere mi padre ?* Does not my father love me ?

In Phrases with a Relative, and without Interrogation.

The Nominative and Relative must be placed before the first Verb ; as, *El hombre que quiero es discreto*, The man whom I love is wise.

With an Interrogation and Negation.

The sentence begins with the Negation and the Predicate, or that which is said of one thing ; as, *No es bastante grande la casa que tengo ?* Is not the house I live in large enough ? *No es así*, It is not so.

Observe,

Observe, that the Auxiliary in the compound Tenses of the Verbs goes always before the Verb.

The Interrogation in *Spanish* is more known in speaking, by the inflection of the voice, than by the note (?), used in writing.

Of the use of the Articles.

The Article must always agree with the Noun in Gender and Number; therefore the Article Masculine *el* is put with Nouns of the Masculine Gender, and the Article Feminine *la* before Nouns of the Feminine Gender. The Neutral Article *lo*, before an Adjective, changes it into a Substantive, as was said before.

Lo, placed before *que*, signifies *what*; as, *Haga lo que quisiere*, Let him do *what* he likes.

Lo qual signifies *which*; as, *Me mandó tales y tales cosas, lo qual se hizo luego*, He ordered me such and things, all *which* was done immediately.

When *lo* is before or after a Verb, then it signifies *it* or *that*; as, *Lo haré*, I will do it; *Haga lo*, Let him do it, *or* do that.

The Article is never made use of before proper names of men, women, gods, goddesses, saints; of months, towns, cities, villages.

Example.—*Carlos Tercero Rey de España*, Charles the Third King of Spain; *Jorge Tercero Rey de Inglaterra*, George the Third King of England, &c. where you must observe, that the Article is not used before the ordinal number, when it is after the name of a man or woman.

Observe, If an Adjective is before the proper names expressing some action, passion, or qualities, then the Article is used before them.

Example.—*El valeroso Federico*, The courageous Frederick; *El omnipotente Jorge*, The mighty George, &c.

The article is omitted in *Spanish*, as it is in *English*, before the Comparatives.

Example.—*Mas vivimos, mas aprendemos*, The longer we live, the more we learn; *Mas se de priéssa, menos se adelánte*, The more haste, the worse speed.

When we speak of substances, or things in general, as of gold; silver, &c. or of virtues, vices, passions, arts, sciences, or plays, we always make use of the Article in *Spanish*, though it be omitted in *English*.

Example.—*El oro y la plata todo lo puéden*, Gold and silver do all things; *La necesidad es madre de la invención*, Necessity is the mother of invention; *La virtud no puede ballarse con el vicio*, Virtue cannot agree with vice; *La filosofía es una ciencia mui noble*, Philosophy is a very noble science; *Juguémos a las naipes*, Let us play at cards.

CHAP. II.

Of NOUNS.

NOUNS are, as we have said, either Substantives or Adjectives. A great many Substantives, and some Adjectives, may be made Diminutives in *Spanish*, to represent the thing spoken of as *little*; or Augmentatives, to represent it as *greater*.

Diminutives are made by adding to the Substantives ending in *o*; or of the Masculine Gender, *illo*, *ito*, *ico*, *éte*, *uélo*, or *éjo*; and to those of the Feminine, *illa*, *ita*, *ica*, *éta*, *uéla*, or *éja*, taking off the *o*.

Example.—From *libro*, a book, are formed these Diminutives, *librillo*, *librito*, *librico*, *libréte*, *libruéls*, *libréjo*; and from *mesa*, a table, *mesilla*, *mesita*, *mesica*, *meséta*, *mesucla*.

Diminutives ending in *illo* and *éjo* denote contempt; as, *librillo*, *libréjo*, a pitiful little book; but those ending in *ito* or *ico* only denote smallness, and sometimes kindness, as well as those ending in *éte* and

and *ino*; as, *mozéte*, a young lad; *palomíno*, a young pigeon.

The same is likewise used in Adjectives; as from *bonito*, we say, *boníco*, *bonitillo*, *bonitico*, a little pretty; from *grande*, *grandecito*, *grandecillo*, &c. somewhat large; and we form the Feminine by changing the last *o* into *a*; as, *bonitica*, *grandezica*.

The Augmentatives, which represent the thing as bigger or great without comparison, are formed by adding to the Noun *ón*, *óte*, or *ázo*; as, *hómbré*, a man; *hombrón*, *hombróte*, *hombrázo*, a great strong man; *perro*, a dog; *perrón*, *perronázo*, *perróte*, *perrázo*, a great mastiff or barn-dog.

Of Adjectives.

All the Adjectives ending in *o* make their Feminine by changing *o* into *a*.

When the Adjectives *priméro*, first, *buéno*, good, are before a Noun of the Masculine Gender, the *o* is taken off; and so we say, *el primér hombre*, the first man; *un buen libro*, a good book.

Of Degrees of Comparison.

In all the Adjectives there are three Degrees of Comparison:

The Positive, which only denotes plainly what the thing is; as, *hermóso*, handsome; *docto*, learned, &c.

The Comparative is made by adding *mas*, more, to the Adjective; as, *mas rico*, more rich; *mas poderóso*, more powerful; *mas fácil*, more easy; *mas capaz*, more capable, &c.

The Superlative is formed either by adding *muy*, very, to the Noun Adjective, as *muy alto*, very tall; *muy útil*, very useful, &c. or in the Nouns ending in *o*, by taking off the *o*, and adding *ísimo* for the Masculine, and *ísima* for the Feminine; as from *docto*, learned, *doctísimo*, *doctísima*, very learned; from *claro*, clear, *clarísimo*, *clarísima*, very clear: but if the Positive has another termination than *o*, then, by only adding *ísimo*,

íssimo, íssima, you make the Superlative; as, from *vil*, base, *vilíssimo, vilíssima*, very base.

Observe, that the following Adjectives make their Comparative in one Word, without adding *mas*; and that it varies quite from the Positive, though their Superlative is formed by the same rules as expressed above.

Buëno, good; *mejor*, better; *boníssimo* or *óptimo*, very good, or the best of all.

Malo, bad; *peór*, worse; *malíssimo* or *péssimo*, very bad, or the worst of all.

Grande, great; *mayor*, greater; *grandíssimo* or *máximo*, very great, or the greatest of all.

Pequeño, little; *menor*, less; *pequeñíssimo* or *mínimo*, the least of all.

Mucho, much; *más*, more; *muchíssimo*, most of all.

Poco, little; *menos*, less; *poquíssimo*, the least of all.

These two are without a Positive and Comparative; *acérrimo, ma, ubérrimo, ma*, very tenacious, very fruitful.

Of Genders.

Nouns in *Spanish*, as we have said, are either Masculine or Feminine, since there is no Neutral Noun. The only means of knowing the Gender of Nouns, is by their termination, as follows:

Nouns ending in *a* are generally of the Feminine Gender; as, *mesa*, a table; *ventana*, a window; *pluma*, a pen, &c. You must except *día*, a day; *planeta*, a planet; *cometa*, a comet; *profeta*, a prophet; *evangelista*, an evangelist; *poeta*, a poet; *Jesuita*, a Jesuit; and other Nouns ending in *a* belonging to a man. Those derived from the Greek are likewise Masculine, as *dóγμα*, a dogma; *problema*, a problem; *thema*, a text; *systéma*, a system; *embléma*, an emblem; *paradoxa*, a paradox.

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the Masculine Gender; as, *diente*, a tooth; *monte*, a mountain; *ente*, a being; *valle*, a valley; *fuerte*, a fort; *vientre*, the belly; *accidente*, an accident, &c.

The exceptions are, *fé*, faith; *fuente*, a fountain; *llave*, a key; *leche*, milk; *mente*, the mind; *torre*, a tower; *peste*, plague; *ánade*, a duck; *ave*, a fowl; *calle*, a street; *carne*, flesh, or meat; *corte*, a Prince's court; *corriente*, a current; *especie*, a species; *frénte*, the forehead; *gente*, people; *muerte*, death; *nieve*, snow; *noche*, night; *nube*, a cloud; *nave*, a ship; *puente*, a bridge; *parte*, part; *serpiente*, a serpent; *licore*, a hare; *mansedumbre*, meekness.

Nouns ending in *re*, with a mute letter before it, are also of the Feminine Gender; as, *costumbre*, a custom; *sangre*, the blood; *pesadumbre*, grief; *muchedumbre*, multitude, quantity; *lumbre*, fire, &c. But these are excepted, *cobre*, copper; *cofre*, a trunk; *nombre*, a name; *enxambre*, a swarm; also the names of months, *Septiembre*, *Octubre*, *Noviembre*, *Diciembre*, which are Masculine.

Nouns ending in *i* are Masculine, when they are derived from the *Arabick*; as, *albelli*, a clove gilliflower; *albolí*, a granary; *zaburí*, one who pretends to see through the earth, stone walls, &c. But, when such words come from the *Greek*, they are Feminine; as, *éxtasi*, a rapture; *syntáxi*, syntax.

Nouns ending in *o* are of the Masculine Gender; as, *libro*, a book; *brazo*, an arm; *vestido*, a garment; *espejo*, a looking glass, &c. except *mano*, a hand; *nao*, a ship.

The Nouns ending in *u* are Masculine; as, *espíritu*, spirit; *ímpetu*, violence, &c.

Nouns ending in *y* are Feminine; as, *ley*, law; *gréy*, a flock; except *Réy*, a King; *Virréy*, a Viceroy.

This is all that can be said about the Gender of Nouns ending in Vowels; now let us speak of the Gender of Nouns that end in Consonants.

Nouns ending in *d* are generally of the Feminine Gender; as, *facilidad*, facility; *sagacidad*, sagacity; *habilidad*, ability, &c. except *césped*, a turf; *huésped*, an host or guest; *ardid*, a stratagem; *adalid*, a leader; *almúd*, a sort of measure; *ataúd*, a coffin; *laúd*, a lute, which are Masculine; *virtud*, virtue, and all those

those that come from the *Latin* Nouns ending in *úda*, are Feminine.

Nouns ending in *l* are Masculine; as, *arancel*, a roll or list; *pedernal*, a flint; *lebrél*, a greyhound; *perexál*, parsley. You must except *cál*, lime; *sál*, salt; *señál*, a sign or token; *cárcel*, a prison; *biél*, the gall; *miél*, honey; *piél*, skin.

Nouns ending in *n* are Masculine; as, *cárbón*, coal; *salmón*, salmon; *esturión*, sturgeon; *atún*, tunny fish; *arincón*, heron; *rincón*, corner; *gorrión*, a sparrow; *abispón*, a wasp, &c. except *fién*, the temple of the head; *sartén*, a frying-pan; and all words from the *Latin* ending in *go*; as, *imágen*, an image, from *imágo*; *márgen*, a margin; also all the Nouns from the *Latin* in *zio* or *sio*; as, *acción*, action; *passión*, passion; *razón*, reason, &c. are all Feminine.

Nouns ending in *r* are Masculine; as, *amór*, love; *delór*, grief, pain; *temblór*, trembling; *alcázar*, a palace; *ambár*, amber, &c. except *segúr*, an ax; *flór*, a flower; *labór*, work.

Nouns ending in *s* are Masculine; as, *combés*, the deck of a ship; *país*, a country or landskip; except *miés*, harvest; *tos*, a cough.

Nouns, ending in *z* are, for the most part, Feminine; as, *páz*, peace; *niñez*, childhood; *naríz*, the nose; *bóz*, a fickle; *lúz*, light; *sordéz*, furdity; *intrepidéz*, intrepidity, &c. except *agráz*, verjuice; *artiféz*, a veil to cover the face; *almiréz*, a mortar; *péz*, a fish; *varníz*, varnish; *tapíz*, a carpet; *malíz*, a shadowing in painting; *arróz*, rice; *albornóz*, a Moorish coat.

All Nouns signifying a male must be of the Masculine Gender; as, *Dúque*, Duke; *Marqués*, a Marquis; *Cónde*, a Count; *albacéa*, executor of a will; but those denoting a female are of course Feminine.

Observe, that there are Nouns used by authors sometimes in the Masculine, sometimes in the Feminine; as, *árte*, *canál*, *colór*, *eclípse*, *embléma*, *már*, *órden*, *márgen*, *orígen*, *théma*. The most constantly used of these,
árte,

árte, canál, eclípsé, embléma, théma, crígen, are masculines: *Colór, órden, már*, and *márgen*, are common to both Genders.

C H A P. III.

Of the Construction of Nouns Substantive.

THE construction of Nouns Substantive is almost the same in *Spanish* as in *English*: that is, when two Substantives come together, so that the one depends on the other, then the latter is put in the Genitive Case.

Examples.—*La iglesia de Dios*, The church of God; *La ventana del quarto*, The window of the room.

When several Genitives meet together, then the Particle *de* is only put before the first.

Example.—*Es professor de physica, anatomía, geographia, &c.* He is a professor of physic, anatomy, geography, &c.

Sometimes this Genitive is turned into an Adjective.

Examples.—*El amor paterno*, Paternal love; *La ternéza materna*, Motherly tendernefs.

When two Substantives Singular are the Nominative of a Verb, this must be put in the Plural.

Example.—*Mi hermano ; mi padre están en el campo*, My brother and father are in the country.

If the Nominative is a collective name, the Verb is always put in the Singular.

Examples.—*La gente se avisó*, The people were advised; *Toda la ciudad asistió*, All the city was present.

Of

Of the Construction of Adjectives.

1. Adjectives signifying desire, knowledge, remembrance, ignorance, or forgetting, and such like, require the Genitive after them, if a Noun follows; and the present Infinitive with the Particle *de*, if it be a Verb.

Examples.—*Es mui ambiciôso de glória*, He is very ambitious of glory; *Estôy deseôso de viajar*, I am desirous of travelling; *Mi amigo es codiciôso de su dinero*, My friend is avaricious of his money; *Esta gente es prôdiga de su vida*, These people are prodigal of their life; *Pedro está mui deseôso de saber*, Peter is very desirous of learning.

2. The Adjectives expressing attention, application, or negligence, have *en* after them.

Examples.—*Es cuidadôso en sus negôcios*, He is careful of his affairs; *Es descuidado en todo*, He is heedless of all; *Es mui atênto en sus modos*, He is very careful of his manners.

3. The Adjectives signifying worthiness or unworthiness, shame, fear, joy, are followed by the sign of the Genitive, *de*.

Examples.—*Los pobres son dignos de compâssion*, The poor are worthy of compassion; *Los embustêros son indignôs de atencion*, The cheats are unworthy of attention; *Es vergonzôso de esta acción*, He is ashamed of this action; *De nada es temerôso*, He is afraid of nothing; *Es mui amigo de carne*, He is very fond of meat; *Está mui alêgre de ver me*, He is very glad to see me.

4. The Adjectives expressing certainty, innocence, capacity, doubt, jealousy, are also followed by the sign of the Genitive.

Examples.—*Es inocente de lo que le acúsan*, He is innocent of what he is accused of; *Esta um ciêrto de esto?* Are you certain of it? *Pedro es capáz de enseñar*, Peter is capable to teach; *Es incapáz de hacêrlo*, He is not

not capable of doing it; *Es muy zeloso de su muger*, He is very jealous of his wife.

5. Nouns Partitives, and certain Interrogatives, require the Genitive; as, *algúno, ninguno, uno, qualquier, primero, segundo, &c.*

Examples.—*Algúno de vosotros*, Somebody of you; *Uno de los dos*, One of the two; *Qualquier de ellos*, Any of them; *De que se trata en Paris?* What do they say in Paris? *De quien habla vm?* What do you speak of?

6. Adjectives signifying fulness, emptiness, plenty or want, require also *de*.

Examples.—*Lleno de disparates*, Full of nonsense; *Falto de juicio*, Without his senses; *País abundante de oro*, A country abounding in gold; *La tierra está llena de pícaros*, The country is full of rogues.

7. Adjectives whereby is signified profit, disprofit, likeness, unlikeness, submitting or belonging to something, govern the Dative Case.

Examples.—*Esto es útil a la navegación*, That is useful to navigation; *Es provechoso a la salud*, It is good for health; *A todos es gustosa la noticia*, These news are agreeable to all; *Esto es igual á aquéllo*, This is equal to that; *Es parecido á su padre*, He is like his father; *Es leal á su Rey*, He is loyal to his King; *Malésto á todos*, Plaguing every body.

8. Adjectives expressing the length, breadth, or thickness of any thing, must be in the Genitive.

Examples.—*Esta ciudad tiene tres millas de largo*, This city is three miles long; *Quántos piés de alto tiene aquélla torre?* How many feet high is that tower? *El paño es de dos varas de ancho*, The cloth is two yards wide.

9. Adjectives signifying experience, knowledge, or science, require *en* after them.

Examples.—*Es versado en libros*, He is versed in books; *Este hombre es experto en medicina*, This man is

is expert in physic; *Juan es mui perito en la navegacion*, John is very skilful in navigation.

Of the Numerals.

All the Numerals govern the Genitive Case.

The Cardinals; as, *primero, segundo, tercero*, &c. as, *El primero de los Reyes*, The first of the Kings.

Distributives; as, *De dos en dos*, Two by two, &c.

Partitives; as, *cada uno, alguno, uno y otro*: Ex. *Vendrá alguno de ellos?* Will any of them come?

Collectives; as, *una docena, quinzena*, &c. Ex. *Una docena de huevos*, A dozen of eggs.

Augmentatives; as, *lo doble, lo triple*, &c.

Universal; as, *ninguno, nada*, none, nothing: Ex. *Nada de esto quiero*, I like nothing of this.

Of the Comparatives.

The Comparative is not made of the Positive in Spanish, as in Latin and English, but by adding *mas*, more, or *menos*, less; which govern *que*, signifying *than*; in which all the force of the comparison consists; as, *El todo es mayor que la parte*, The whole is greater than the part; *Esto es peor que aquello*, This is worse than that; *Juan es menos rico que Pedro*, John is less rich than Peter.

Mas and *menos* are also sometimes followed by the Genitive, when they express a quantity, without any particular comparison. Ex. *Es mas discreto de lo que parece*, He is more wise than it appears; *Es menos sabio de lo que se piensa*, He is less learned than it is thought.

When the Articles *el, la, or lo*, are placed before *mas* or *menos*, then they require the Genitive; as, *El mas astuto de los hombres*, The most cunning of all men; *La mas discreta muger del mundo*, The most discreet woman in the world; *El mas hermoso de todo*, The most beautiful of all.

CHAP. IV.

Of PRONOUNS, and their Construction.

PRONOUNS, as we have said, are words substituted instead of Nouns, to express the person or thing before named, and avoid a repetition.

There are several sorts of Pronouns; *viz.* Personals or Primitives, Possessives, Demonstratives, Relatives, and Indefinites.

Of Personals.

Pronouns Personal express either the person who speaks, to whom, or of whom one speaks; as, *yo*, I; *tu*, thou; *el*, he; *ella*, she; *nosotros*, *nosotras*, we; *vosotros*, *vosotras*, ye; *ellos*, they; or *ellas*, they, speaking of the Feminine.

Observe, that *mismo*, in the Masculine, and *misma* in the Feminine, is added sometimes to these Pronouns Personal, in order to give more strength to the expression; as,

1. *Yo mismo*, myself; *yo misma*, myself, when a woman speaks, in the Singular, and *nosotros mismos*, or *nosotras mismas*, ourselves, in the Plural Number.

2. *Tu mismo*, *tu misma*, in the Singular, *thyself*; *vosotros mismos*; *vosotras mismas*, yourselves, for the Masculine and Feminine.

3. *El mismo*, himself, for the Singular Masculine; *ellos mismos*, themselves, for the Plural.

4. *Ella misma*, herself, for the Singular Feminine; *ellas mismas*, themselves, for the Plural.

5. *Se*, one's self, which has no Plural, and is common to both Genders in *Spanish* as in *English*, is used in an indeterminate sense.

L

When

is expert in physic; *Juan es mui perito en la navegacion*, John is very skilful in navigation.

Of the Numerals.

All the Numerals govern the Genitive Case.

The Cardinals; as, *primero, segundo, tercero*, &c. as, *El primero de los Reyes*, The first of the Kings.

Distributives; as, *De dos en dos*, Two by two, &c.

Partitives; as, *cada uno, alguno, uno y otro*: Ex. *Vendrá alguno de ellos?* Will any of them come?

Collectives; as, *una docena, quinzena*, &c. Ex. *Una docena de huevos*, A dozen of eggs.

Augmentatives; as, *lo doble, lo triple*, &c.

Universal; as, *ninguno, nada*, none, nothing: Ex. *Nada de esto quiero*, I like nothing of this.

Of the Comparatives.

The Comparative is not made of the Positive in Spanish, as in Latin and English, but by adding *mas*, more, or *menos*, less; which govern *que*, signifying *than*; in which all the force of the comparison consists; as, *El todo es mayor que la parte*, The whole is greater than the part; *Esto es peor que aquello*, This is worse than that; *Juan es menos rico que Pedro*, John is less rich than Peter.

Mas and *menos* are also sometimes followed by the Genitive, when they express a quantity, without any particular comparison. Ex. *Es mas discreto de lo que parece*, He is more wise than it appears; *Es menos sabio de lo que se piensa*, He is less learned than it is thought.

When the Articles *el, la, or lo*, are placed before *mas* or *menos*, then they require the Genitive; as, *El mas astuto de los hombres*, The most cunning of all men; *La mas discreta muger del mundo*, The most discreet woman in the world; *El mas hermoso de todo*, The most beautiful of all.

C H A P. IV.

Of PRONOUNS, and their Construction.

PRONOUNS, as we have said, are words substituted instead of Nouns, to express the person or thing before named, and avoid a repetition.

There are several sorts of Pronouns; *viz.* Personals or Primitives, Possessives, Demonstratives, Relatives, and Indefinites.

Of Personals.

Pronouns Personal express either the person who speaks, to whom, or of whom one speaks; as, *yo*, I; *tu*, thou; *el*, he; *ella*, she; *nosotros*, *nosotras*, we; *vosotros*, *vosotras*, ye; *ellos*, they; or *ellas*, they, speaking of the Feminine.

Observe, that *mismo*, in the Masculine, and *misma* in the Feminine, is added sometimes to these Pronouns Personal, in order to give more strength to the expression; as,

1. *Yo mismo*, myself; *yo misma*, myself, when a woman speaks, in the Singular, and *nosotros mismos*, or *nosotras mismas*, ourselves, in the Plural Number.

2. *Tu mismo*, *tu misma*, in the Singular, *thyself*; *vosotros mismos*; *vosotras mismas*, yourselves, for the Masculine and Feminine.

3. *El mismo*, himself, for the Singular Masculine; *ellos mismos*, themselves, for the Plural.

4. *Ella misma*, herself, for the Singular Feminine; *ellas mismas*, themselves, for the Plural.

5. *Se*, one's self, which has no Plural, and is common to both Genders in *Spanish* as in *English*, is used in an indeterminate sense.

L

When

When the Verb expressing the action or passion of a subject reflects the sense upon the same, then the Reciprocal *me, te, se,* and *nos, os, se,* are made use of before or after such Verbs; and *à sí mismo, à sí misma,* or *à sí mismos, à sí mismas,* may be added after the Verb and the said Reciprocal: therefore *yo mismo, tu mismo, &c.* serve only as Nominatives to such Verb.

Examples.—*Me amo,* or *me amo à mi mismo,* or *à mi misma,* I love myself; *Te amas,* or *te amas à tí mismo,* or *à tí misma,* Thou lovest thyself; *Se ama,* or *se ama à sí mismo,* or *à sí misma,* He loves himself, or she loves herself; *Nos amamos à nosotros mismos,* or *à nosotras mismas,* We love ourselves; *os amáis à vosotros mismos,* or *à vosotras mismas,* Ye love yourselves; *Se aman à sí mismos,* or *à sí mismas,* They love themselves.

N. B. All Nouns or Pronouns, excepting the four Personals, *yo,* I; *tu,* thou; *nosotros,* we; *vosotros,* ye; belong to the third Person.

The first Pronoun Personal, *yo,* I, is either put before the Verb or not, because in *Spanish* the terminations differ in the several Persons of Tenses. The same may be said of the other Pronouns, excepting the third Pronoun, *el* or *ella,* he and she, which are expressed in order to shew the difference of Gender of the Nominative.

We seldom make use in *Spanish* of the second Person Singular or Plural, except through a great familiarity among friends, or speaking to God; also between a wife and husband to themselves, or when parents address their children, masters their servants.

Examples.—*O Dios, seas vos mi Padre verdadero,* O God, thou art my true Father; *Tu eres un buen amigo,* Thou art a good friend.

But when we speak in *Spain* to others than the above mentioned, then, instead of *tu* and *vos,* we make use of *usted* in the Singular, and of *ustedes* in the Plural, which are a contraction of *vuestra merced,* and *vuestras mercedes,* you, your Worship, your favour, and are signs of the third Person. In writing, *usted* is expressed

pressed by *v. m.* or *v. m^d*. in the Singular, and *v. m^{ds}*. in the Plural.

There are other contractions of titles made in speaking, as, *usía* for *vuestra Señoría*, *usñencia* for *vuestra Excelencia*; these are also signs of the third Person: therefore, the Verb following must be in the third Person Singular or Plural.

Examples.—*Cómo está v. m?* How do you do? *Van v. m. s. al campo?* Do you go to the country? *Buenos días tenga v. m.* Good-morrow, or Good-day; *Buenas noches tenga v. m.* Good-night to you, Sir.

Observe here, that when an Adjective comes after *vuestra merced*, *vuestra Señoría*, *Excelencia*, &c. it does not agree in Gender with *v. m^d*. *v^a*. *S^a*. &c. but with the Person we speak to, or of.

Examples.—When to a man, we say, *v. m. d. es muy bueno*; You are very good: *V^a Exc^a sea bien venido*. Your Excellency is welcome. When we speak to a lady or woman, thus: *Es V. M^d. muy hermosa*, You are very beautiful; *Son V. M^{ds}. muy discretas*, You are very discreet; *Es V^d S^a generosísima*, Your Ladyship is very generous.

Nos is generally used by the King, a Governor, a Bishop, and a Notary in their writings; as *Nos mandamos*, &c. We command; and then it signifies *we* in *English*: but *nos* before or after a Verb in *Spanish* signifies *us* in *English*; as, *Nos ha concedido esta merced*, He has granted us this favour; *Dé nos tiempo*, Give us time; *No nos diga esto*, Do not tell us this.

Vos is also applied to a single person, but only speaking to inferiors, or between familiar friends, to avoid the word thou, *tu*, which would be too gross and unmannerly, as always made use of in speaking to slaves or dogs.

Sometimes *vos* loses the *v*, as in the second Person Plural of a Reciprocal Verb; Ex. *Vos os levantáis temprano*, You get up soon; also before other Verbs; *Yo os daré*, I will give you: *Pedro os entregará mi carta*, Peter will deliver you my letter; *Idos a otra parte*, Go somewhere else.

Los and *las* are sometimes construed with the first and second Persons Plural; as, *Los que somos Españoles, amémos à nuéstra pátria*, We that are Spaniards, let us love our country; *Las que somos casádas, obedecemos à nuéstrós marídos*, We who are married, let us obey our husbands.

Mi, ti, si, are used after Prepositions; as, *cerca de mi*, near to me; *para ti*, for thee; *por sí*, by himself; but after *con*, with, the syllable *go* must be added to these Pronouns; as, *con mígo*, with me; *con tígo*, with thee; *con sígo*, with himself or herself.

Me, te, se, are joined to Verbs, and stand for the Dative and Accusative Cases; as, *Dióme*, He gave me; *Deséo servirte*, I desire to serve thee; *Amase*, He loves himself.

They are also placed in the reciprocal Verbs; as, *irse*, to go; *passearse*, to walk. *Se* before the third Person Singular of a Verb answers to the English Passive Impersonal; as, *Se dice*, It is said; *Se decía*, It was said, &c. then the Verb has no determinate Nominative, and may be called Passive Impersonal.

Observe, that the oblique Pronouns, *lo, la, le, los, las, les, me, te, se, nos, os*, when placed after Verbs, are joined to them; as, *Amola*, I love her; *Víle*, I saw him; *Harélo*, I will do it; *Diráme*, He will tell me; *Iráse*, He will go, &c.

Formerly, when *le, la, les, los, las*, were joined to the present Infinitive Mood, they changed the last into *l*, thus; *amalle*, instead of *amarle*, to love him; *decille* instead of *decirle*; and it is so found in old books, but it is now quite out of use.

When the Pronoun is referred to a Noun Masculine, then *le* must be made use of; and when to a Noun Feminine, then *la* is used. When it has reference to a part of a sentence or a clause, then we use *lo* in the Neuter.

Of Possessives.

Pronouns Possessive are so called because they express the possession: they are of two sorts, viz. Conjunctives and Absolutes.

The Conjunctives have their name from their being joined to substantives; they are six, as we have said; *mi*, my; *tu*, thy; *su*, his or her; *nuéstro*, *nuéstra*, our; *vuestro*, *vuestra*, your; *su*, their. *Su* signifies also *its*. Their Plural is made by adding an *s*; as *mis*, *tus*, *sus*, &c. They are declined with the Particles *de* and *a*, and are applied to Substantives Singular, as well as Plural.

Mi, my, shews the possession of the first Person Singular; *tu*, thy, that of the second; and *su*, his, that of the third; but *su* is always used in speaking with *usted*; and so they never say *tu libro*, thy book, but *su libro*, putting the Pronoun of the third Person instead of that of the second.

Nuéstro, *nuéstra*, our, shews the possession of the first Person Plural; *vuestro*, *vuestra*, your, that of the second; and *su*, their or its, that of the third; observing that *su* is also made use of in the room of *vuestro*, *vuestra*, in the polite way of speaking.

Examples.—*Téngo su libro*, I have your book; *He visto sus obras*, I have seen their works; *Sus ojos son hermosos*, y *su boca agraciada*, Your eyes are handsome, and your mouth graceful.

In these examples *de usted* is understood, or *v. m. s.*

It is to be observed, that these Conjunctives must always be put before Substantives, as in *English*.

Possessives are also called Absolute, because they may go without a Substantive: there are six of them, viz. *mío*, *mía*, mine; *tuyo*, *tuya*, thine; *suyo*, *suya*, his or hers; *nuéstro*, *nuéstra*, ours; *vuestro*, *vuestra*, yours; *suyo*, *suya*, theirs; and their Plural by adding an *s* to the Singular.

The three Articles are sometimes used before these Pronouns.

Examples.—*Cuyo es este sombrero? es el mio*, or *es mio*, Whose hat is this? it is mine; *Este anillo es el mio*, This is my ring; *Esta pluma es la mia*, This is my pen.

Lo mio, *lo tuyo*, *lo suyo*, &c. signifies what is mine, thine,

Los and *las* are sometimes construed with the first and second Persons Plural; as, *Los que somos Españoles, amémos à nuéstra pátria*, We that are Spaniards, let us love our country; *Las que somos casadas, obedecemos à nuéstrós maridos*, We who are married, let us obey our husbands.

Mi, ti, si, are used after Prepositions; as, *cerca de mi*, near to me; *para ti*, for thee; *por sí*, by himself; but after *con*, with, the syllable *go* must be added to these Pronouns; as, *con mígo*, with me; *con tígo*, with thee; *con sígo*, with himself or herself.

Me, te, se, are joined to Verbs, and stand for the Dative and Accusative Cases; as, *Dióme*, He gave me; *Deséo servirte*, I desire to serve thee; *Amase*, He loves himself.

They are also placed in the reciprocal Verbs; as, *irse*, to go; *passearse*, to walk. *Se* before the third Person Singular of a Verb answers to the English Passive Impersonal; as, *Se dice*, It is said; *Se dice*, It was said, &c. then the Verb has no determinate Nominative, and may be called Passive Impersonal.

Observe, that the oblique Pronouns, *lo, la, le, los, las, les, me, te, se, nos, os*, when placed after Verbs, are joined to them; as, *Amola*, I love her; *Vile*, I saw him; *Harélo*, I will do it; *Diráme*, He will tell me; *Iráse*, He will go, &c.

Formerly, when *le, la, les, los, las*, were joined to the present Infinitive Mood, they changed the last *r* into *l*, thus; *amalle*, instead of *amarle*, to love him; *decille* instead of *decirle*; and it is so found in old books, but it is now quite out of use.

When the Pronoun is referred to a Noun Masculine, then *le* must be made use of; and when to a Noun Feminine, then *la* is used. When it has reference to a part of a sentence or a clause, then we use *lo* in the Neuter.

Of Possessives.

Pronouns Possessive are so called because they express the possession: they are of two sorts, viz. Conjunctions and Absolutes.

The Conjunctives have their name from their being joined to substantives; they are six, as we have said; *mi*, my; *tu*, thy; *su*, his or her; *nuéstro*, *nuéstra*, our; *vuestro*, *vuestra*, your; *su*, their. *Su* signifies also *its*. Their Plural is made by adding an *s*; as *mis*, *tus*, *sus*, &c. They are declined with the Particles *de* and *a*, and are applied to Substantives Singular, as well as Plural.

Mi, my, shews the possession of the first Person Singular; *tu*, thy, that of the second; and *su*, his, that of the third; but *su* is always used in speaking with *usted*; and so they never say *tu libro*, thy book, but *su libro*, putting the Pronoun of the third Person instead of that of the second.

Nuéstro, *nuéstra*, our, shews the possession of the first Person Plural; *vuestro*, *vuestra*, your, that of the second; and *su*, their or its, that of the third; observing that *su* is also made use of in the room of *vuestro*, *vuestra*, in the polite way of speaking.

Examples.—*Téngo su libro*, I have your book; *He visto sus obras*, I have seen their works; *Sus ojos son hermosos, y su boca agraciada*, Your eyes are handsome, and your mouth graceful.

In these examples *de usted* is understood, or *v. m. s.*

It is to be observed, that these Conjunctives must always be put before Substantives, as in *English*.

Possessives are also called Absolute, because they may go without a Substantive: there are six of them, viz. *mío*, *mía*, mine; *tuyo*, *tuya*, thine; *suyo*, *suya*, his or hers; *nuéstro*, *nuéstra*, ours; *vuestro*, *vuestra*, yours; *suyo*, *suya*, theirs; and their Plural by adding an *s* to the Singular.

The three Articles are sometimes used before these Pronouns.

Examples.—*Cuyo es este sombrero? es el mio*, or *es mio*, Whose hat is this? it is mine; *Este anillo es el mio*, This is my ring; *Esta pluma es la mia*, This is my pen.

Lo mio, *lo tuyo*, *lo suyo*, &c. signifies what is mine, thine,

thine, his; but *la mia, la tuya, la fuya*, signifies *thee, thy, &c.*

Examples.—*Saldré con la mia*, I will obtain it; *Saldrá con la fuya*, He will obtain it; *Con la tuya adelante*, Go on with your resolution.

Los míos, los suyos, &c. signify *my relations, my friends, my people*; as, *Los míos no me quieren*, My parents do not like me; *Vaya el con los suyos*, Let him go with his people, his countrymen, &c.

Of Demonstratives.

These Pronouns are called Demonstratives, because they serve to shew things or persons, and determine their distance.

There are three Demonstratives in *Spanish*, as was already said, viz. *este, esta, esto*, this; *esse, essa, esso*, that; *aquél, aquélla, aquello*, that: but there is this difference between them, that *este* denotes a thing near the person who speaks, *esse* a thing near him we speak to, and *aquel* expresses something at a distance from both.

Examples.—*Esta pluma es buena*, This pen is good; *Esse país en que vive*, That country where you live; *Aquél reino de Mexico, es mui poblado*, That kingdom of Mexico is well peopled.

The same rule must be applied to the Feminine, *esta, essa, aquélla*; and to the Neutral, *esto, esso, aquello*; and so of their Plural Number, *estos, esos, aquellos*; *estas, esas, aquellas*.

En estas y en éstas signifies *in the mean while*, and is the same as *entre tanto*. *En esto*, by this, is also used adverbially, to express that an action was interrupted by something.

Aquél, aquélla, are sometimes joined with the first Pronoun Personal, *yo* or *nos*; and then it stands for the first Person, and gives more energy to the sentence; as, *Yo aquél que en tiempos pasados, &c.* I, the very same who in former times, &c. *Yo aquélla que gozaba de tantos gustos*, I, the same woman who enjoyed so many pleasures, &c.

Observe,

Observe, that *mismo*, *misma*, *misinos*, *misimas*, may be joined with the three Pronouns Demonstratives, *este*, &c. in the Masculine, Feminine, and Neutral Genders.

Examples.—*Esta misma flor quiero*, I like this flower; *Esse mismo libro leo*, I read the very same book; *Esto mismo digo*, I say the very same thing; *Aquello mismo hizo*, He made the very same thing.

Otro, *otra*, are also joined with the said Pronouns; and then we say, *estótro*, *estótra*; *essótro*, *essótra*; as, *Estában hablando da esto y de estótro*, They were talking of this and that.

Of Relatives, Interrogatives, and Indefinites.

1. *Que*, who, that, which, is relative, and may have reference to any thing, either man, beast, &c. as, *El libro que tengo*, the book that I have; *El hómr que vóo*, The man whom I see; *El maéstro que enseña*, The master who teaches.

Que, what, is also interrogative; as, *Que le ha sucedido?* What happened to him? *Que hombre es este?* What man is this? *Que dice vm?* What do you say?

Que serves also to express admiration; as *Que palácio! que quartos! que galerías!* What a palace! what rooms! what galleries!

Que, that, after a Verb, is a Particle governing the following Verb; as, *Mandé que viniéste*, I ordered that he should come.

Que, when used as a Particle Comparative, signifies *than*, and as in *English*; so we say, *Esto es mejor que estótro*, This is better than the other; *Es tanto que puede ser*, It is as much as can be. We use to say likewise, *Que sea así, que no sea*, Let it be so or not; *Que llueva, ò que no llueva*, Let it rain or not.

Que is also causative, and stands for *porque*; as, *Hagalo, que yo no puedo*, Let him do it, for I cannot.

2. *Qual*, which, is a relative expressing the quality of things; as, *No sabemos qual es bueno, qual es malo, qual de este color, qual del otro*, We do not know which

is good, which is bad, which of this colour, which of another.

Qual is sometimes a Particle disjunctive, and then it signifies *some*; as, *Cantában todas, qual con voz dulce, qual con voz doliénte*, All sung, some with a sweet voice, and some with a dismal one.

Qual is also comparative; as, *Qual es la madre, tal es la hija*, Such as the mother is, such is the daughter. Sometimes it is distributive; as, *Qual salta, qual canta, qual rie*, One jumps, one sings, another laughs.

Qual, who, being joined to the Articles *el, la, lo,* or *los* and *las*, is relative: it is also interrogative: as, *Qual quéire um?* Which will you have of them? *Tal qual* is also used to mean a little quantity of one thing; as, *Tal qual libro tengo*, I have a few books.

Quién, quiénes, who, is interrogative, and sometimes relative; as, *Quien es este hombre?* Who is this man? or, *El Rey, quien havia visto lo que passaba*, The King, who had seen what passed. It is also distributive; as, *Quién coge el oro, quien la plata, quien los diamantes*, One gathers the gold, one the silver, another the diamonds.

Cuyo, cuya, cuyos, cuyas, whose, is interrogative, and then denotes the possession; as, *Cuyo es este caballo?* Whose horse is this? It is also relative, signifying *of which*, or *whose*; as, *Este hombre, cuyos delitos, son tan grandes, &c.* This man, whose crimes are so great, &c.

CHAP. V.

Of VERBS, and their Construction.

THE Verb must always agree with its Nominative in Number and Person. When there are two Nominatives Singular before a Verb, it must be put in the Plural Number. When a Noun is collective,

the Verb requires the Singular ; not the Plural, as in *English* ; so we say, *La gente esta mirando*, People are looking. These are the general rules of Concordance belonging to Verbs.

The Verbs are divided, as we said, into Personals and Impersonals. The first are so called, because they generally express actions, passions, &c. of persons. There are in *Spanish* four sorts of Verbs Personal, viz. *Active*, *Passive*, *Neuter*, and *Reciprocal*.

The *Active* expresses an action upon something ; as, *Como pán*, I eat bread. So the action of *eating* is directed to *bread*, as to its object.

The *Passive* shews, that the person or thing spoken of is the object of the action of another person or thing ; as, *Dios es amado*, God is loved. But observe, that there is in *Spanish* another way of making the Passive, by adding the relative *se* to the third Person Singular or Plural : Ex. *Se ama à Dios*, God is loved.

The *Neuter* properly is that which makes a perfect sense by itself ; as, *corrér*, to run ; *assentír*, to assent ; *blasphemár*, to blaspheme, &c.

The *Reciprocal* is that which returns the sense so, that the action or passion remains in its subject ; as, *amarse*, to love oneself ; *perderse*, to lose oneself, &c.

Observe, that in the *Spanish* language the same Verb may become *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, or *reciprocal*, according to its different senses ; as, *acostár*, to put one to bed, is active, and is made passive by conjugating it with the Verb *estár*, and the Particle *acostádo* ; as, *Pedro está acostádo*, Peter is in bed. When it signifies to side, to take a party, to engage in a faction, then it is Neuter ; as, *Todo el puéblo acostó a la parte de su Rey*, All the people took the party of their King. When the same Verb signifies to come near one place, it is Reciprocal ; as, *Dába tales golpes, que nunca pudiéron acostárse à el*, He gave such strokes, that they never could come up with him.

The Verbs Impersonal are divided into two, the *Actives* and *Passives*.

The

The *Actives* are those which do not admit of persons; as, *helár*, to freeze; *llover*, to rain; because you cannot say, *biélo*, I freeze; *el llueve*, He rains.

The *Passive Impersonals* are formed in *Spanish* of the third Person Singular of the Verb made impersonal, by adding the Particle *se*; and it is to be observed, that we make more use of this way of expressing the Passive in the third Person, than by the Verbs Auxiliary *ser* and *estár*, with the Participle Passive of the Verb conjugated: therefore *se cuenta* is better for it is reported, than *es contádo*; as will be explained at large in speaking of their construction.

Of the Auxiliary Verbs, Habér, To have, Estar and Sér, To be, &c.

The Verb *habér* is made use of to conjugate all the compound Tenses of Verbs; as, *Yo he amádo*, *yo había amádo*, I have loved, I had loved. Sometimes the Verb *tenér*, to hold or have, is used to conjugate the compound Tenses; as, *Yo tengo de ir al campo*, I must go to the country.

Habér signifies nothing by itself, it is only an auxiliary Verb; but the word *tenér* in *Spanish*, expressed the possession of something; as, *Tengo dinero*, I have money, *Tiene mucha habilidad*, He has a great deal of capacity.

Habér, in account-books and trade, expresses credit or discharge; as, *Yo he de habér en nuestra cuenta cien pesos*, I must have credit in our account of one hundred dollars.

Habér is also taken impersonally in *Spanish*, and it signifies in *English*, *there be*; as, *Hai mucho oro en Mexico*, There is a great quantity of gold in Mexico; *Havía mucha gente en la iglesia*, There was a great deal of people in the church.

Habérse, made reciprocal, is the same as *to behave*, *to act*; as, *Se hubo el Governádor con tal discreción, que todos le admiráron*, The Governor behaved with such wisdom, that every body admired him.

Habér,

Habér, used as a Substantive, means *the wealth or stock*; as, *Es hombre de haberes*, He is a wealthy man, a rich man; *Virtúd, linage, y habér, pocas veces se encuentran juntos*, Virtue, nobility, and riches, seldom are found together.

Estar and *ser*, to be, must not be made use of indifferently, though in *English* there is no word to distinguish between them. In *Spanish* their difference is very considerable, *ser* signifying or denoting the essential and proper quality or quantity of a thing; as, *ser bueno*, to be good; *ser malo*, to be bad or wicked; *ser grande*, to be big; *ser pequeño*, to be little. But *estar* signifies an accidental quality or quantity, and serves to denote the place where a person or thing may be found; as, *Mi hermano está en Londres*, My brother is in *London*; *Estaré en casa à las tres*, I will be at home at three o'clock; *Adónde está mi reloj?* Where is my watch? *Está sobre la mesa*, It is upon the table.

Estar is also used to express the state of health; as, *estar malo* or *enfermo*, to be sick; *estar bueno*, to be well. Therefore, in inquiring after a person's health, we make use of the verb *estar*, and never of *ser*; as, *Como está su padre?* How does your father do? The answer is, by repeating the Verb *estar* or not; *está bueno*, *está malo*, he is well or ill; or *bueno*, *malo*. Where it is to be observed, that *bueno* and *malo* do not signify *good* or *wicked* with the Verb *estar*, as they do with the Verb *ser*, but *well* or *ill*.

In short, *estar* is used to express any accidental affection or passion of the soul; as, *Este hombre está muy triste*, This man is very melancholy; *Está muy alegre*, He is very merry; *Está muy enojado el Rey*, The King is very angry. So that, as was said, *ser* must be made use of to denote the inseparable essence or being; whereas *estar* implies accidents; as, *Mi vestido es bueno, pero está mal hecho*, My cloaths are good, but they are ill made; where you may see the essential being of the thing itself expressed by the word *es*, and the accidental

accidental fault of its being ill made, under the word *está*.

Ser is likewise used to express the temper or habitual disposition of mind, and the condition of a man in his nature; as, *Este hombre es de un genio muy apacible*, This man is very good tempered; *Mi hija es muy diligente*, My daughter is very diligent; *Mis amigos son muy codiciosos*, My friends are very covetous. But *estar* only denotes the accidental affection of one's soul; as, *A veces está alegre, à veces triste*, He is sometimes merry, sometimes sad.

The Verb *estar* is also taken for *to understand*, or *to attend*; as, *Estói en lo que vm. dice*, I attend to your discourse, or I understand what you say. Sometimes it signifies *to consist*; as, *En esto está la dificultad*, The difficulty consists in this.

Estar is also the same as *to believe*, or *to hope*; as, *Estói en que vendrá mi amigo*, I hope my friend will come; *Está en que es muy sabio*, He believes he is very learned. This Verb is also used to conjugate the other Verbs, chiefly expressing action; as, *Estói leyendo, estói escribiendo*, I am reading, I am writing, &c.

Estar, with the Particle *à* after it, signifies *to be ready*; as, *estar à cuéntas*, to be ready to count; *estar à exámen*, to be ready for examination.

The same Verb, followed by the Participle *de*, expresses to have the quality or property of what the Noun means; as, *estar de priessa*, to be in a hurry; *estar de casa*, to be kept at home; *estar de viáge*, to be ready to go on a journey; *estar de vér*, deserving to be seen; *estar de oír*, deserving to be heard.

Estar with the Preposition *en*, in, signifies *to be present in a place*; denoting likewise the actual action or passion expressed by Nouns or Verbs following; as, *Estói en hacer esto*, I intend to do this; *Estói en el campo*, I am in the country; *Estoi en ir à vérle*, I must go and see him.

Estar, with the Preposition *para*, denotes the inclination of doing what the following Verbs express, but
without

without a full determination; as, *Estói para salir de Londres*, I have a mind to go and leave *London*.

Estár, with the Preposition *por*, and the Infinitive of the Verb following, means, that the thing expressed by the Verb is not yet done; as, *Esto está por escribir*, This is not yet written; *Esto está por limpiár*, This is not yet cleaned.

Estárse, reciprocal, signifies *to stay long, to delay*; as, *Porque se estuvo tanto?* Why did you stay so long? We say also, *Estárse muriendo, estar se cayendo, estar se dormiendo*, To be dying, to be falling, to be sleeping.

There are a great many other dictions wherein *estár* is used; as the following:

Estár à la mano, to be at hand, to express when one thing is ready to be made use of, or when it is near to one who wants it.

Estár à punto, to be ready.

Estár à raya, to be contained in the proper bounds and limits.

Estár bien una cosa, is for a thing to fit, to suit well; as, *Mi casaca me está bien*, my coat fits me very well.

Estár de buena ò de mala, is, to be ill or good tempered or natured.

Estár de esquina, is for two persons to fall out together.

Estár para ello, ò estar de gorja, to be merry, and full of joy.

Estár en ascuas, to be plagued or molested with some grief or pain.

Estár en mano de uno, to be in one's power, to depend on one.

Estár en prénfa, is to be oppressed with grief, to be afflicted with the greatest anguish.

Estár en sí, ò en su juicio, is for one to have present what he is doing, and to fix his attention to it.

Estár en todo, to know every thing; also to be very careful and diligent in business.

Estárse

Estárse en sus treces, to be headstrong, to be very obstinate and stubborn.

Estár sobre uno, to press one about some business, to urge with vehemence and importunity.

Estár uno sobre sí, is taken for *to be* prepared for the execution of any thing.

The above mentioned directions are the greatest part of the several meanings given to the Verb *estár* in *Spanish*, which I hope will be very useful to young beginners. Now we must also say something of the other Auxiliary, *Sér*, To be.

When *ser* signifies the possession of a thing, it governs the Genitive; as, *La calle es del Rey*, The street belongs to the King; *Esta casa es de mi padre*, This house belongs to my father.

Sér de algúno, expresses, in *Spanish*, to follow the opinion or party of one, or to be his friend; as, *Sóitado de em.* I am yours; *Siempre fue de D. Enríque*, He followed always the Part of Mr. Henry.

En sér is taken for a thing to be whole or entire, without any alteration or mutilation; as, *Los géneros están en sér*, The goods are not sold.

Es quien es, signifies that a person behaves as a gentleman, and that, by his actions, he deserves his employments. It may also signify that a person is wicked.

Of the Construction of Verbs Active, Passive, &c.

There are in the *Spanish* Verbs, but four simple Tenses in the Indicative Mood, viz. the Present, Preterimperfect, Preterperfect, and Future. The Imperative has only the Present; but the Optative or Subjunctive has the Present, Three Preterimperfects, and the Future. All the rest are compound Tenses, formed by circumlocution.

The present expresses the action done when one is speaking; as, *Yo me paseo*, I walk; *Yo escribo*; I write, &c.

Sometimes

Sometimes the Present is made use of instead of the first Preterperfect; as, *Como iba caminando, le encuentra, le desnuda, y le ata à un árbol*, As he was going, he meets him, he strips him, and ties him to a tree.

You must observe likewise, that there is a difference between the first Preterperfect and the others, and it consists in this, that the former must express the time when an action passed, but not the latter; besides, that the first extends farther than the others, which refer to time lately elapsed. So you may say, *Le ví dos años há*, I saw him two years ago; but you cannot say, *Lo he visto dos años há*, because *he visto* only extends to a time so lately past, that it appears to have something of the Present. This must be particularly observed, to avoid the frequent equivocations that may happen in speaking and writing.

The first Future expresses only that one thing shall be done; as, *Lo haré*, I shall do it; but the compounds imply an obligation to any thing; as, *Hé de darle esto*, I must, I am obliged to give him this; I will give him this; *Havré de ir à Londres*, I shall be obliged to go to London; *Havía de hacer tal cosa*, He was obliged to do such a thing.

The Optative in *Spanish* has always some signs annexed to it, or rather some Conjunctions, as, *Oxalá, ó si, plegue à Dios*, Would to God, I pray God, God grant.

The Potential has not signs in *Spanish* answering to the *English* signs, *are, can, may, might, could, and should*; though some Authors believe that *puede que, and es menester que*, are the signs of this Mood.

The Subjunctive has always some Conjunction before it; as, *si, como, quando, que, &c.*

The two first Imperfects of the Optative or Subjunctive Mood are very often preceded by some of the Adverbs, *como, que, quando, aunque, &c.* They are expressed in *English* by the Auxiliary signs, *could and should*; as, *Oxalá amara la virtud*, God grant that you could love virtue; *Si el amase à Dios, tambien le amaría*

ría Dios, Should he love God, God also would love him; *Si tralajára más, ganaría dinero*, If he could work more, he would gain money.

When two Verbs come together with or without any Nominative Case, then the latter must be in the Infinitive Mood; as, *Quiere vm. aprendér el Inglés*; Will you learn to speak *English*; *Pedro desía mucho saber la geometría*, Peter has a great desire of understanding geometry.

All Verbs Active govern the Accusative; as, *Quiero la música*, I love music: but if they are followed by a proper name of God, man, or woman, or any Noun expressing their qualities or title, then it governs the Datives Case; as, *Amo al Rey*, I love the King; *Haláron à Juan en el camino*, They found John in the road.

All Verbs of gesture, moving, going, resting, or doing, as also Verbs that have the word that goes before, and the word that comes after, both belonging to one thing, require the Nominative after them; as, *Pedro vá errado*, Peter goes on wrong; *El pobre duerme seguro*, The poor sleep without care. Also the Verb of the Infinitive Mood has the same Cases, when Verbs of wishing and the like come after them; as, *Todos deséan ser ricos*, Every body wishes to be rich; *Antes quisiéra ser sabio que parecerlo*, I had rather be learned than be accounted so.

Verbs governing the Genitive.

Verbs signifying grief, compassion, want, remembrance, forgetting, &c. will have the Genitive; as, *Me pesa mucho de la muerte de su hermano*, I am very sorry for the death of your brother; *Me compadecí de sus desgracias*, I pitied him for his misfortunes; *Este hombre carece de juicio*, The man is out of his senses; *Necésito de dineros*, I want money; *Peréce de hambre*, He perishes with hunger. *De* is thus put before the thing spoken of in the discourse, as, *Acuérdese de lo que me*
dix,

also, Remember what you said to me ; *Me olvidé de todo este*, All this I forgot.

The Reciprocals of jeering, boasting, and distrust-
ing, govern also the Genitive ; as, *jaerárse*, *gloriárse*,
picárse, *desconfiárse*, *avergonzárse*, *corrérse*, &c.

Verbs governing the Dative.

All Verbs Active govern the Dative, as we have
said, only when the Substantive represents a person ;
as, *Conózco a su amigo*, I know his friend, &c.

The following Verbs belong to this rule of the
Dative :

Jugar, to play ; as *Juégó à los naipes*, I play at cards ;
Jugaré à los ciéptos, I will play at piquet ; *Jugar àl
axedréz*, to play at chess, &c.

Obedecér, *desobedecér*, *complacer*, *agradár* ; as, *Obedézco
à Dios y al Rey*, I obey God and the King ; *Complació
en todo à los soldádos*, In all he pleased the soldiers.

Mandár, when it signifies to command an army,
company, &c. requires the Accusative ; but when
other things, the Dative ; as, *Davila mandába los ca-
bállos*, Davila commanded the horse ; *El Governadór
mandó à todos los ciudadános de retirárse en sus casas*, The
governor ordered all the inhabitants to retire into their
houses.

Ir, to go ; as, *Vói à Paris*, I go to Paris ; *Iré ma-
ñana à vér mi hermano*, I will go to-morrow to see my
brother.

Assistír, *ayudár*, *socorrér*, to help, to assist ; as *Ayu-
daré al trabájo*, I will help to work.

Saludár, to salute or greet ; as, *Salúda muy cortés à
todos*, He salutes very civilly every body.

Hablár, to speak ; *llamár*, to call ; *satisfacér*, to
satisfy ; *servír*, to serve ; *favorecér*, to favour ; *desafiár*,
to challenge ; *absolvér*, to absolve ; *aconsejár*, to give
advice ; *amenazár*, to threaten.

Verbs of pleasing, displeasing, granting, denying,
pardoning, as also all sorts of Verbs with these Parti-
cles *to* or *for* after them, will have the person in the
Dative Case, and often the thing in the Accusative.

The Impersonals *acontecér, sucedér, avenir, convenír, importár, pertenecér, placér*, and the like, will often have a Dative, and an Accusative of the person ; as, *A mí me suceaió*, It happened to me ; *A el le conviéne*, It suits him, it is convenient for him ; *No le importa à el*, It does not concern him, &c.

Verbs governing the Ablative.

The *Latin* Verbs which govern the Accusative of the Thing, and the Dative of the Person, govern generally the same in *Spanish* ; as, *Escríba à su hermano, lo que digo*, Write to your brother what I do say ; *Da el dinero à mi sastre*, I will give the money to my tailor, &c.

Verbs of asking, teaching, arraying, and most of the Transitive Verbs, have after them the Accusative Case of the doer or sufferer, whether they be active or common ; and sometimes Verbs Neuter will have an Accusative of the thing ; as *Gozo salud*, I enjoy health ; *Pido esta gracia, ruego este favor*, I ask this favour ; *Toca muy bien la flauta, el violín, &c.* He plays very well on the flute, the fiddle, &c.

Generally Active Verbs require an Accusative, yet they sometimes require a Dative, when the action is directed to some person ; as, *matár à uno*, to kill one ; *llamár à uno*, to call one ; *hacér bien*, to do good ; *curár una enfermá*, to cure a sickness ; *seguír las órdenes del Rey*, to follow the King's orders ; *descubrir la verdad*, to discover the truth ; *ganár mucho crédito*, to get a great credit.

Sér, to be, in the Infinitive, sometimes governs an Accusative ; as, *Es bueno sér hombre honrado*, It is good thing to be an honest man ; *Que ridículo es ser orgullóso !* How ridiculous it is to be proud and haughty !

Verbs governing the Ablative.

Verbs Passive, and the greatest part of the Recrocals, require the Ablative with *de* or *por* ; as, *Yo fui llamado del Rey* or *por el Rey*, I was called by the King ; *Me retiré de la ciudad*, I retired from the city ;

but you must except these Reciprocals : *acostárse, re-
costárse, sentárse, metérse, introducirse, &c.* all which must
have the Ablative with the Preposition *en*, in.

The price of any thing bought or sold, or bartered,
will have the Accusative, with *por* ; as, *Lo compró por
cien pesos*, He bought it for one hundred dollars ; *Me
vendió por menos de lo que vm. dice*, He sold it to me
for less money than you say ; *Troqué mi hacienda por
unas casas*, I exchanged my estate for some houses.

Verbs of plenty, filling, emptying, loading, unload-
ing, will have the Ablative ; as, *Esta tierra abunda de
trigo*, This country abounds with corn ; *El jarro está
lleno de agua*, The mug is full of water ; *Está cargado de
misérias*, He is loaded with calamities.

Verbs that signify receiving, distance, or taking away,
must have the Ablative ; as, *Recibí tres cientos pesos de
Juan*, I received three hundred dollars of John ; *Se-
villa dista ochenta leguas de Madrid*, Seville is eighty
leagues from Madrid.

Verbs of arguing, quarrelling, fighting, &c. will
have the Ablative with *con* ; as, *Reñó mas de una hora
con su hermano*, He quarrelled more than one hour with
his brother ; *Peleó con la mayor valéntia*, He fought
with the greatest courage.

Lastly, take notice that the following rules are
always observed for the Verbs :

1. If the word governed by the Verb expresses a
thing animate, it is put in the Dative Case, being a
particular idiom of the *Spanish* ; as, *Conózco á su padre*,
I know his father ; *Llamó á las tropas*, He called the
troops.

2. Verbs of motion to a place always govern the
Dative ; as *Vói á la comédia*, I go to the play : but
Verbs of motion from a place govern the Ablative
with the Particle *de* ; as, *Vuelvo de la campaña*, I return
from the country. If the motion or passion is through,
or for a thing, then the Verbs govern the Accusative
with *por* ; as, *Passaré por Londres*, I will come by the
way of London ; *Me han reñido por vm.* They scolded
me for you.

3. In Spanish, as in Latin, the Accusative Case is generally made use of to express a thing indefinitely; as, *Llevo todo lo necesario*, I carry all that which is necessary; *Há trahído todo su caudál*, He brought over all his riches.

4. The Verbs *vér*, to see, and *mirár*, to look, differ, because *vér* requires an Accusative; as, *Ver los ciélos abiértos*, To see heaven opened, that is, to find the occasion; but *mirár* governs the Dative and Accusative; as, *Solo mira à su provecho*, He only aims at his profit; *Vio César una estatua de Alexandro Magno, y mirándola dió un gran suspiro*, Cæsar saw a statue of Alexander the Great, and, looking at it, he sighed deeply. When *mirár* signifies to take care of one, then it governs the Accusative with *por*; as, *En todo miro por va.* In every thing I take care of you.

Of the Conjunctions governing the Subjunctive or Optative.

When the following Conjunctions are in a sentence between two Verbs, the second is generally put in the Subjunctive Mood: *Que, para que, porque, aunque, bien que, óxala, supuésto que, puésto que, dado que, a fin que, con que, pues que, &c.* as you may see in these examples:

Es menéster, es preciso que venga, He must come; *Era preciso que viniéssse*, It was necessary that he should come; *Me alegro que haya venido*, I am very glad he is come; *No se para que pueda servir esto*, I do not know what this is good for; *Para que venga*, In order that he may come. But observe, that *porque*, being interrogative or causative, does not require the Subjunctive; as, *Porque corre vm?* Why do you run?

Aunque, bien que, although, govern the Subjunctive Mood; but before the Imperfect, it requires the Indicative; as, *Aunque suplicába tanto*, Though he entreated so much.

Oxala requires always the Subjunctive; but *supuésto que, dado que, &c.* in some Tenses, govern the Indicative; as, *Pués to que venía à caballo*, Since he came on horseback.

horseback; *Con que vendrá mañana*, So he will come to-morrow.

The Impersonal Verbs generally govern the Subjunctive with *que*; but with this distinction: When the Impersonal is in the present or future Tense of the Indicative Mood, then it requires the Present of the Subjunctive Mood; but when the Impersonal, or any other Verb taken impersonally, is in any of the Preterites Indicative, then it governs the Imperfect, the Perfect, or Pluperfect of the Subjunctive, according to the sense; as, *Impórta mucho que el Rey véa todo*, It is of great moment that the King may see all; *Convino que el príncipe fuese con el*, It was convenient that the Prince should go with him.

The Present of the Subjunctive is likewise used when the Particle *por* is separated from *que* by an Adjective; as in this idiom: *por grande, por admirable, por docto, por sábio que sea*, Though he be great, admirable, learned, &c. *Un enemigo, por pequeño, que sea, siempre daña*, An enemy, though little, always hurts.

An Imperative often requires the Present, Preterimperfect, or Future of the Subjunctive; as, *Séa lo que sea*, Let it be what it will, or, Though it be so; *Suceda lo que sucediese*, Let happen what would; *Séa lo que fuere*, Happen what shall happen, at all events.

The Tenses of the Subjunctive Mood follow generally these: *luégo que, quando, si, como, aunque, &c.* as, *Luégo que venga, saldremos à passear*, As soon as he comes, we will go and take a walk; *quando viniere, estaremos prontos*, When he comes, we will be ready.

The Imperfects of the Subjunctive Moods are required after *si, quando, aunque, ó y como, de gusto, con gusto, de buena, ó mala gana, ó quan de gana, por ventura, acaso, &c.* as, *O y como lo haría yo!* How I would do it! *De buena gana iría à París*, I would go with pleasure to Paris; *Por ventura sería el capaz de esto?* Would he be able to do this? *Acaso se enojaría*, Perhaps he would be angry for it.

Observe, that *pues, pues que, aunque, como, quando,*
M 3 and

and *luégo*, may also be construed with all the Tenses of the Indicative Mood ; as, *Quando el Rey lo vé todo, no le engañan*, When the King sees every thing, he is not deceived ; *Luégo que llegó, hablé con él*. As soon as he came, I spoke with him.

In *Spanish* there is not a general sign before the Infinitive, as in *English* the Particle *to* ; but there are several Particles used before the Infinitive, of the same import as *to* in *English*, and they are governed by the preceding Verbs or Nouns. These Particles are *a*, *para*, *de*, *con*, *en*, *por*, *hasta*, *déspues de*, and the Article *el*, when the Infinitive serves as Nominative to another Verb.

1. *A*, coming between two Verbs, denotes the second as the object of the first ; as, *La tardanza de nuestras esperanzas, nos enseña a mortificar nuestros deseos*, The delay of our hopes teaches us to mortify our desires.

2. *Para* denotes the intention or usefulness ; as, *Para probar la paciencia sirve la adversidad*, Adversity serves to try one's patience ; *Lo hizo para molestar me*, He did it on purpose to plague me. *Para*, after an Adjective, denotes its object, it is also a sign of futurity ; as, *Aún estamos para descubrir la causa*, We are still to seek for the cause ; *Está pronto para obedecer*, He is ready to obey.

De is put between two Verbs, if the first governs the Genitive or Ablative ; and when the Substantive or Adjective governs either of these two Cases, *de* must go before the following Verbs ; as, *Acabó de ver a mi padre*, I have just seen my father ; *El enfado de oírle me causaba sueño* ; Tired with hearing him, I fell asleep ; *Es tiempo de irse*, It is time to go away.

Observe, that all these Particles are used in *Spanish* before the Infinitive, on the same occasions where in *English* *to*, *for*, *of*, *with*, *in*, *till*, *after*, &c. are placed before the Participle Present of the Verb ; as, *Se divierte en cazar*, He delights in hunting ; *Por trabajar mucho está malo*, By working too much he is sick.

Pierde su tiempo en passeár, He loses his time in walking; *Por robár le ahorcáron*, For stealing he has been hanged.

Sometimes the Infinitive takes the Article *el*, when it becomes the Nominative to the sentence; as, *El dormír demasiado no es saludáble*, Too much sleeping is unwholesome; *el amár*, loving; *el cantár*, singing; where you may see it answers to the Participle Present of the *English* that ends in *ing*, as in these examples:

Nunca se cansa de jugár, He is never weary of playing; *Fuéron á peleár*, They went to fighting; *Venía de bebér*, He came from drinking; *He de írme, sin despedírme?* Shall I go away without taking my leave?

CHAP. VI.

Of PREPOSITIONS.

PREPOSITIONS are Particles governing a Case, some are separable, that is, they may be used separately, as well as in composition; some inseparable, and are only made use of with the words of their composition.

The Separables are *à, al, ante, con, contra, de, en*. We will treat of each of them, and of their construction, separately.

1. *A* governs the Dative Case; as, *A Dios solo adoro*, I adore God only. It is also used to denote where one goes to; as, *Vói à Londrés*, I go to London. *A* is also placed before an Infinitive, governed by another Verb antecedent; as, *Vámos à passeár*, Let us go to take a walk.

2. *A* is also used before many Adverbs, and adverbial dictions, to express the nature of some action; as, *à sabiéndas*, knowingly; *à trueco*, in exchange, or instead; *à sazón*, at the time; *à brazo partido*, by force of both arms; *à todo brazo*, with all one's strength.

3. *A* is sometimes taken instead of *en*, in ; as, *à vista de tal dictámen*, on seeing such opinion ; *à fuéro de hómbré honrádo*, upon my honour. It is also used for *por*, by ; as, *Señór si será este à dicha el moro encantádo* ? Sir, will this be perhaps the enchanted moor ? instead of *bácia*, towards ; as, *Se fue à ellos con resolución*, He went to them with courage ; *Vió la cara à los enemígos*, He turned his face to the enemy.

4. Lastly, *A* is a Particle of composition, and expresses in Verbs the action of the Nouns Substantive or Adjective they are composed of ; as, *acanálar*, to channel ; *ablandár*, to appease ; *alargár*, to enlarge ; *achicár*, to lessen, &c. from the Nouns *canál*, a channel ; *blando*, soft or peaceable ; *largo*, long ; *chico*, little.

Anté, before, is frequently used in composition, and expresses precedency, either of time, place, situation, or action ; as, *antecedér*, to precede ; *antecámara*, antichamber ; *antecesor*, antecessor ; *antevér*, to foresee, &c. *Ante* or *anti*, in composition, signifies also contrary to ; as, *antecristo*, antichrist ; *antipápa*, antipope ; *antípodas*, antipodes ; *antimónia*, antimony.

Con, with, is a Preposition expressing always in composition, in the beginning of words, union in action, passion, &c. as, *concurrír*, to concur, to join in something ; *convenír*, to agree ; *condescendér*, to condescend, &c. *Con*, before *mí*, *tí*, *sí*, requires the addition of *go* ; as, *Venga con migo*, Come with me ; *Iré con tígo*, I shall go with thee ; *Habla con sígo*, He speaks with himself.

Contra, against, is an Abverb governing the Accusative ; it is also used in composition, and expresses contrariety or opposition ; as, *contradecír*, to contradict ; *contravenír*, to act against some precept or order. When *en* is joined with *contra*, it governs the Genitive ; as, *Que dice vm. en contra de esto* ? What do you say against this.

De, of, is used in composition before Nouns, Verbs, and Adverbs, when it changes their signification ; as, from

from *pendencia*, a quarrel, *dependencia*, an affair ; from *poner*, to put, *deponer*, to depose ; from *fuera*, out, *afuera*, outwardly. This preposition governs also the Genitive and Ablative ; as, *La ley de Dios*, The law of God ; *Vengo de España*, I come from Spain. *De* serves also to shew the matter a thing is made of ; as, *un reloj de oro*, a gold watch ; *una casa de madera*, a wooden house. *De* is also made use of instead of *por* ; as, *Pensó morir de vergüenza*, He was like to have died with shame ; *De miedo lo hizo*, He did it through fear ; *De* is also put before the Infinitive in Spanish, when the English make use of their Participle Present in *ing* ; as, *Cansado de caminar, se sentó*, Tired of walking, he sat down ; *Es hora de comer*, It is dinner-time. *De* is also joined to words expressing time ; as, *de madrugada*, soon in the morning ; *de día*, by day ; *de noche*, at night ; *de verano*, in the summer. *De* is also placed between two Nouns, to enforce the expression ; as, *el pícaro de mi mozo*, my roguish servant ; *la vellaca de la ventera*, the wagging landlady.

En, in, being in composition, denotes growing or making ; as, *encarecer*, to grow dearer ; *enflaquecer*, to grow lean ; *engrandecer*, to make greater, to magnify ; *entristecer*, to grow melancholy ; *ensoberbecer*, to grow proud, &c. *En* is sometimes put before Nouns adjective, to make them Adverbs ; as, *en particular*, instead of *particularmente*, particularly ; *en general*, for *generalmente*, generally, &c. *En* is also used instead of *sobre* ; as, *En su propia cabeza caerán las maldiciones*, The curses will fall upon his own head.

Prepositions inseparable are only used in composition with Nouns and Verbs ; they are the following :

Ad ; as, *advenedizo*, a stranger ; *advertir*, to advertise ; *adversidad*, adversity.

Am ; as, *amparo*, protection, shelter ; *amparado*, protected, helped.

Co ; as, *cobabitár*, to live together ; *coberedero*, co-heir ; *co-operár*, to co-operate, &c.

Com ; as, *comparár*, to compare ; *comprometer*, to compromise ; *commutar*, to exchange.

Des,

Des, before Nouns or Verbs, implies commonly a privative or negative signification ; as, *desdichádo*, unhappy ; *desacierto*, mistake ; *desbacer*, to undo ; *desengañar*, to undeceive.

Dis, in composition, sometimes is negative, as in *discordar*, to disagree ; sometimes it implies division or adversity ; as, *disponer*, to dispose ; *distribuir*, to distribute ; *distinguir*, distinguish.

Ex, as, *extraher*, to extract ; *expeler*, to turn out ; *expedir*, to dispatch.

In, in composition, has commonly a negative or privative sense, denoting the contrary of the meaning of the primitive word ; as, *incapaz*, unable, incapable : *inacción*, inaction, &c. but sometimes *in* is affirmative, as in *Latin*.

Observe, That *in* before *r* is changed into *ir* ; as, *irregular*, irregular ; *irracional*, irrational : before *l* into *i* ; as, *ilégel*, illegal, contrary to law ; *ilimitado*, unlimited. Before *m*, *in* is also changed into *im* ; as, *immaterial*, immaterial ; *immaculado*, spotless, &c.

Ob ; as, *obtener*, to obtain ; *obviar*, to prevent.

Pre, in composition, marks priority of time or rank ; as, *preceder*, to go before, to precede ; *predecessor*, an ancestor.

Pro ; as, *proponer*, to propose ; *perseguir*, to prosecute.

Re is also an inseparable Particle used by the *Latins*, and borrowed from them, to denote iteration or a retrograde action ; as, *reedificar*, to rebuild ; *realzar*, to raise up again.

Se ; as, *separar*, to separate ; *separado*, separated.

So ; as, *socorrer*, to help ; *solicitar*, to solicit.

Sub, in composition, denotes a subordinate degree ; as, *subalterno*, subaltern ; *subdividir*, to subdivide, &c.

CHAP. VII.

Of Adverbs, Conjunctions, and Interjections.

ADVERBS of quality, as was said before, are formed by adding *mente* to the Feminine Gender of Adjectives, as is done in *English* by the addition of the syllable *ly*. When two of these adverbs are together in a sentence, *mente* is taken off from the first of them; as, *Obró prudente y felizmente*, He acted prudently and happily.

The Adverbs in *Spanish* are placed in a sentence either before or after the Verb; but when the Adverb is negative, then it must go before the Verb, to avoid the two negations, which would, as in *Latin*, make an affirmation. Thus, instead of *No veo à nadie*, you must say, *À nadie veo*, I see nobody; *Nada entiendo de esto*, I do not understand any thing of this; *Nunca le he visto*, I have never seen him: but do not say, *No entiendo nada*, nor *No le he visto nunca*.

The principal Conjunctions used in *Spanish* are either copulative, disjunctive, causative, conditional, or exceptive.

I, e, signifying *and*, are Conjunctions copulative; but with this difference, that *y* is used before all words, excepting those that begin with *i*, when they make use of *è*; as, *Los Francésès è Inglésès*, The French and the English; *Los Españóles è Italiános*, The Spaniards and the Italians, &c. *Como*, as, *tambien*, also, are likewise Copulatives.

Conjunctions disjunctive are, *ni*, neither, *tampóco*, neither; as, *Ni Pedro ni Juan*, Neither Peter nor John. *O* or *ó*, signifying *or*, *either*, are also disjunctive; as, *O rico ó pobre*, either rich or poor; *De qualquier color, ó blanco, ó negro*, Of any colour, either white or black; *O redóndo ó óvalo*, round or oval.

Observe, That *ó* is required when the word before it ends with an *o*, and the word after begins with the same Vowel, in order to avoid the bad sound resulting from it.

Tá;

Yá, either, is also a Disjunctive ; as, *yá esto, yá aquello*, either this or that.

Causative ; as, *porqué*, why ; wherefore.

Conditional ; as, *si*, if ; *dado que*, granting that ; *supuesto que*, supposing that ; and they govern the Subjunctive Mood, as mentioned before.

Exceptive ; as, *si no*, if not ; *mas*, but ; *de otro modo*, otherwise, &c.

There are also some other sorts ; as, *à lo menos*, at least ; *aunque*, although ; *todavía*, notwithstanding, nevertheless.

Interjections are parts of speech, that discover the mind as affected with some passion, such as joy, pain, admiration, aversion, &c.

To express joy, they say, *Ha ! Ha ! Ha ! Ha !* ; to express pain or grief, *Ay ! Alas ! Ay de mí !* Alas for me !

O is made use of in *Spanish* to express several affections of the soul, viz. Of admiration ; as, *O que hermoso templo !* What a handsome temple ! Of exclamation ; as, *O suma bondad*, O great goodness ! Of compassion ; as, *O que lástima !* What a pity ! Of indignation ; as, *O ruin hombre !* O base man !

O is also used ironically ; as, *O que linda cosa !* A fine thing indeed ! &c.

Observations upon the modern Orthography now used and established by the Royal Spanish Academy.

The *b* is commonly confounded with the *v* in the pronunciation, which causes the greatest confusion in the Orthography of these two letters ; therefore it is necessary to shew their difference, and their true pronunciation and difference in writing.

B ought to be pronounced only by closing the lips, and *v* by touching the superior teeth with the inferior lip. The difference is sensible, yet, by a certain affinity or likeness between these two letters, in speaking as well as in writing, there has always been the greatest confusion. *Nebrixa* says, in his *Castilian Orthography*,
that,

that, in his time, some people could scarce make any distinction between these two letters.

Notwithstanding this, they anciently established a certain difference between the *b* and *v*, though not founded on the origin of words: in the beginning of a word they used the *b*, and at the end the *v*; and if the word taken from the *Latin* had only one syllable wrote with *v*, it was changed into *b*: so from *vespa* they used to write *abispa*; from *vernice*, *barníz*; and from *verrere*, *barrér*: but, if in the root there were two syllables wrote with *b*, the second was changed into *v*, as from *bibere*, *bevér*; but when there were in the primitive word two syllables with *v*, the second was changed into *b*; as from *vivere*, they used to write *bivir*.

The confusion of these two letters has not been peculiar to our language, because the *beth* among the *Hebrews*, and the *beta* or *bita* among the *Greeks*, was pronounced as the *v*: and, in very ancient inscriptions, we find *bixit*, instead of *vixit*; *abe* for *ave*, and likewise *vase* for *bese*, *devitum* for *debitum*.

Yet, with this confusion, we find, that, in some circumstances, the difference between the *b* and *v* has been constantly preserved in writing; for the *b* has always been made use of before the *l* and the *r*, as in the words, *bloquéo*, *bravéza*. Likewise, at the end of a syllable, the *v* has never been used in writing; therefore *absolvér*, *abstinéncia*, *obtenér*, *obser*, and such words, have constantly been written with the original *b*. For which reasons, in order to establish a true and necessary distinction in writing these two letters, the following rules have been made:

1. The *b* is made use of in words in whose original there is a *b*; as, *bebér*, from *bibere*; *escribír*, from *scribere*, &c. Likewise, some words, though written with a *v* in their etymology, require the *b*, from the common and constant practice of spelling them so; as *abogádo*, *baluarte*, *borla*, *búytre*, &c. If the origin of the word is uncertain, the *b* has the preference in writing; as in *bálago*, *befágo*.

2. The

2. The *p* found in some words, originally *Greek* or *Latin*, is changed in *Spanish* into a *b*; so, with it are wrote *obispo*, from *episcopus*; *cabello*, from *capillus*; except some few words which have constantly been written with a *v*, as *Sevilla*, &c.

3. Before an *l* or an *r*, it has always been usual, as we have said, to write the words with a *b*; as in *blanco*, *doble*, *bravo*, *bronce*, &c.

The *c* has in *Spanish*, as in other languages, two different sounds; it is hard or strong before the Vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, as in these words, *cabo*, *cota*, *cura*; but before *e* or *i* this letter is sounded soft, as in the words, *cerjo*, *ciénto*.

The difficulty of its use in writing is, that other letters have the very same pronunciation; for if the *c* stands before the *a*, it sounds like the *k*; so is the first syllable pronounced in the word *camarin*; as in *kalendario*, though the syllable *ca* in the first is written with a *c*, and in the second, *ka*, with a *k*. When the *c* is before *o*, it is confounded with the *q* and the *k*, as in *cotidiáno*, *cobécho*. When before the *u*, it sounds as a *q*; as in *cuájo*, *cúyo*, &c. In order to avoid the confusion arising from the similarity of sounds, the following rules must be observed:

1. The syllable will always be written with a *c*, except in words which, by a constant use, have been wrote with their primitive *k* or *ch*, as some Nouns proper, or others, which are preserved without alteration, and as we have taken them from foreign languages; as *kan*, *cháribdis*.

2. The syllables *ce*, *ci*, should be written always with *c*, except in some few words that must be spelled with *z*, from constant use, and consonant with their origin; as *zelo*, *zizaña*.

3. When the Nouns Singular end with a *z*, their Plural must be terminated in *ces*, and this syllable must be written with *c*; as *felices*, from *feliz*; *luces*, from *lúz*; *veces*, from *véz*, and the same in the words derived from them. The reason is, that the pronunciation being the same in these cases, the usage of our language,

language, following the origin, requires the *c*, rather than the *z*.

4. The syllable *co* must always be written with a *c*, except in some few words, which, according to their original and usage, are spelt with a *q*; as *quodlibéto*, *quéciente*.

5. The syllable *cu* before a Consonant is expressed with a *c*; as in *cuna*, *cuño*, *cura*, *cuyo*; likewise when it is followed by some Vowel forming a Diphthong, as in *cuájo*, *cuénta*, *cuidádo*; but observe, that several words are excepted, which, for their origin, and the common use, must be written with a *q*, as *quándo*, *quánto*; and some with the syllable *qüe*, as *aqüeduéto*, *qüetor*, *consequénte*, *qüestion*, and their derivatives.

The *c* followed by an *b*, is a double letter in *Spanish*, as well as in *English*; and in both languages *cb* is the sign of a sound, which is analysed into *tsh*; as *church*, *much*, *chin*, *crutch*: it is the same sound that the *Italians* give to the *c* simple before *i* and *e*, as *citta*, *cerro*.

Cb is sounded like *k* in words derived from the *Greek*, as *chímera*, *chímica*, *méchina*, &c. and their derivatives. These words must be written with *cb*, in order to preserve the etymology to the eye, though some erroneously write them with the syllable *qui*. *Cb* is also pronounced as a *k* in these words: *archángel*, *architécto*, *archítrabe*, and their derivatives.

The *g* in *Spanish* has two different pronunciations; the first is soft, when this letter is before the Vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, as in the words *gana*, *gota*, *gusto*; or when between the *g* and the Vowels *e*, *i*, an *u* is found, as in *guerra*, *guia*, where the *u* loses almost its sound, which is the common pronunciation: therefore, when the *u* after the *g* has its full sound, as in the words, *agüero*, *vergüenza*, then to distinguish this pronunciation from the other more in use, two points are put upon the *ü*, as above, in the words *agüero* and *vergüenza*. If an *l* or *r* is between the *g* and a Vowel, then it has a soft pronunciation, as in the words *glória*, *grácia*.

The second sound of the *g* is guttural and strong,
and

and it is used only before the *e* and the *i*, forming the syllables *ge* and *gi*; which pronunciation is peculiar to *Spanish*, and quite different from other languages. This sound of the *g* before the Vowels *e* and *i* may be confounded with that of the *j* and *x*, which are also gutturally aspirated before the same Vowels; for the word *gémido* is equally pronounced, whether it is written with a *g*, with *j*, or with an *x*, which causes the difficulty of writing this word with its proper letter. In order to avoid this confusion, the following rule must be observed:

When there is a *g* in the origin of the word, then the *g* must be made use of in *Spanish*; as in these words: *gente*, *gigante*, *ingénio*, *ingenuidad*. The same rule must be observed for the *j* and *x*, as in *ájio*, *baraja*, and in *flexo*, *tráxe*, *redúxe*, &c.

The *b* alone, without a *c* before it, is not a letter, but serves only as a mark of a very soft aspiration, when followed by the Vowels, and so little sensible, that it scarcely can be perceived; therefore, some grammarians were of opinion to omit it entirely, as well in the beginning of words as in other syllables; but it is necessary to preserve it, not only to shew to the eye the origin of the word, but because its aspiration in some words is very perceptible, and that the *b* has been constantly made use of.

The aspiration of the *b* is so sensible before the syllable *ue*, that it comes very near to the sound of a *g*, as in *buévo*, egg; *buéffo*, bone; which has caused the mistake of those who erroneously write these words and others with a *g*. The aspiration of the *b* is also sensible when it is between two Vowels, and it serves to distinguish their pronunciation better, as in the word *albabaca*, &c.

The *f* used in the *Latin* words, or in the old *Spanish*, is usually changed into *b*. In order to shew when the *b* must be made use of, the following rules ought to be attended to:

1. When the word begins with the syllable *ue*, then the *b* must be put before, which on this occasion has a
sort

sort of guttural, but soft sound. Observe, that we preserve this use, as it comes from our forefathers, who established it when the *u* Vowel was confounded with the *v* Consonant, that they might in reading distinguish *uevo* from *vevo*, and *ueso* from *veso*.

2. The *b* must be written, according to the most common and constant use, in all the words that have that character in their origin before some Vowel, and have the same pronunciation, especially between Vowels; as in the words *honór*, *hora*, *alimobáza*, *zabúrda*.

3. All the words which in their Etymology are wrote with an *f*, and whose pronunciation has been softened, must be written with *b*, by changing the *f*; as *bijo*, from *fijo*; *bacér*, from *facér*.

4. There are some other words in which the *f* of the origin has been changed in *y*, and so commonly we pronounce *yérro*, which comes from *ferrum*. *yél* from *fil*, &c.; but several people pronounce these words with an *i* Vowel, thus, *hiérro*, *hiél*, and such Nouns, placing an *b* before the *i*, to denote the separation of the following Vowel, and likewise because the *f* of the origin is usually changed into an *b* in *Spanish*. In this variety of pronuunciations, we must preserve the constant use of our Orthography, which is to write these words with *hi*.

Of the I and the Y.

The *i* is always a Vowel, and is never used as a Consonant; the *y* was introduced in *Spanish* to serve as a vowel in the words having a *Greek* origin; which use did not last.

The *y* in *Spanish* is sometimes a Consonant, sometimes a Vowel; it is a Consonant when before a Vowel, as in the words *pláya*, *sáya*; for then the *i* is never made use of. The *y* is a Vowel, then preceded by another Vowel forming a Diphthong; as in *ayre*, *alcáyde*; and yet this is not general; for when the pronunciation of the *i* is long, it must be always used, as in *éido paraíso*; and so likewise the distinction is easily made

made between *ly*, signifying *law*, and *leí*, I read the Preterite of the Verb *leér*; and *Rey* a King, and *reí*, Preterite of the Verb *reír*, to laugh, without any note to distinguish the pronunciation or quality of these words, and others alike. The *y* is also a Vowel when it is a Conjunctive Particle; as, *Juan y Diégo*, John and James; which has been practised more than 200 years ago in printing and writing. *Juan Lopez de Velásco* establishes it as a rule, in his *Castilian Orthography*, printed in 1582. From the same time the *y* is used instead of the capital *I* in the beginning of proper Nouns. From these observations, the following rules are drawn:

1. The *y* must always be used in *Spanish* when it serves as a Consonant before a Vowel, as in *yugo*, *yunque*, *ayúno*, *ráyo*, &c.

Observe, That there are some words which are wrote, but by very few people, with a *y*; as *yérvo*, from *fervéo*; and *yéro*, from *ferio*, but the greater number write these words, adding the syllable *bi*, thus, *biérvo*, *biéro*, for the reasons deducted, when treating of the *b*. In this variety of opinions, the best is to follow the common practice, and the more frequent use, which is to write these words with *bi*, because it agrees more with the nature of our language.

2. When the *i* is followed by another Vowel, and is pronounced with it at once, making a Diphthong, it must be changed into *y*; as in *bay*, *ley*, *doy*, *estóy*, *combóy*, *muy*, *ayre*, *alcáyde*, *réyna*, *péyne*, *oydór*; except the words where you find the syllable *ui*, as in *cuidádo*, *descuidár*; excepting *búytre*, and the second Persons Plural of the Verbs; as *amáis*, *amábais*, *véis*, *vísteis*, *viéreis*, and others, in which, though the *i* is pronounced together with the Vowel before, it must be used according to the common and constant practice.

3. The Conjunction must always be expressed with a *y*, and never with an *i*; as, *Pedro y Pablo*, *hablan y cantan*. The *y* must likewise be used in the beginning of words requiring a capital letter, as in these words, *Ysla*, *Yglesia*, *Ygnécio*, &c.

In order to distinguish in writing the *i* from the other

other letters which have the same sound before the Vowels as the *x*, and the *g* before *e* and *i*, the origin of words must be observed, and they must be written accordingly, following these rules :

1. The syllable *ja*, *j^o*, *ju*, must be written in *Spanish* with a *j*; as, *jaſtância*, *jóven*, *juſticia*; excepting from this general rule some words, which, according to their origin, and the most common use, are wrote with an *x*, as will be explained when treating of that letter.

2. The syllables *je*, *ji*, though, according to the general rule, they ought to be written with a *g*, yet these words, *Jeſus*, *Jeruſalem*, *Jeremias*, &c. are excepted, as well as the diminutives, or words derived from Nouns ending in *ja* or *jo*; as from *paja*, *pajita*; from *viéjo*, *viejecito*; from *ajo*, *ajito*, &c.

The *k* came to the *Latins* from the *Greeks*, and we took it from the first; as it is as little used in *Spanish* as in *Latin*, and could be entirely left out of our alphabet, since the *c* before the Vowels, *a*, *o*, *u*, has the same sound, as well as the *q*, before the syllable *ue* and *ui*; therefore the letter *k* must only be made use of in *Spanish* in the words that have such letters in their origin, as *kalendario*, *kiries*, *kan*, &c.

The single *l* does not require any observation, being written as it is pronounced.

The double *ll*, though composed of two letters, is single, because it expresses only one sound, as in the words *llave*, *lleno*, *mellizo*, *llero*, *lluvia*, &c. which sound is the same as the *French* have when the two *ll*'s are preceded by an *i*: the *Italians* express it by the syllable *gli*, and the *Portuguese* with *lh*.

Observe, That though the original word has two *ll*'s in *Spanish*, they put only one; as in *bula*, which comes from the Latin *bullā*, and which, if written in *Spanish* with the two *ll*'s of its origin, would signify noise, *ullā*.

The letter *m* is used as in other languages.

The letter *n* does not require any observation, being always pronounced and written after the same manner, without any exception.

The *n* with a little mark upon it, thus (*ñ*) is a letter peculiar to the *Castilian* or *Spanish*, and has the same sound as that which the *Italian* and *French* give to *gn* in these words, *campagne*, *Bretagne*. It may be observed, that sometimes in *Spanish* we change the *gn* of the origin into *ñ*; as *tamáño*, which comes from *tam magnus*, *leño*, from *lignum*, &c.

The *p* has only one sound in *Spanish*; but when this letter is before an *f* or *t*, or an *b*, then the following rules must be observed:

The *p* before the *f* in the beginning of some words derived from the *Greek*, as *psalmo*, *ptisana*, is not pronounced, therefore must be omitted in writing; so we spell *sálmio*, *tisána*; but some few words must be excepted, and will preserve their etymological Orthography, because the *p* is pronounced; as, *pneumático*, *pseudoprofeta*.

The *ph* of some words taken from the *Hebrew* or *Greek* may be omitted in *Spanish*, putting in its place the *f*, which has the same pronunciation, and is a letter proper to our language; but some technical words that have been constantly wrote with *ph*, are excepted from this rule; as, *pharmacopéa*, *philósofo*, &c.

The *q* in *Spanish*, as well as in *Latin*, is never made use of but before an *u*, which sometimes is pronounced and sometimes not. In order to explain these cases and avoid the use of other letters having the same pronunciation, the following rules must be observed:

1. The syllable *qua*, in which the *u* is always sounded, must be constantly written with a *q* in all the words that have such letters in their origin, and has been preserved by use; as *qual*, *quánto*, *quadérno*, &c.

2. The syllables *que*, *qui*, in which the *u* is not sounded at all, as in *quéja*, *quicio*, must always be wrote with a *q*, because we have no other proper letter to express the same sound; except the *ch* and *k*, which we preserve in some words the same as we have received them from foreign and dead languages.

3. The syllable *que*, in which the *u* following the *q* is pronounced, could be wrote with a *c*, without changing the sound; yet this syllable is often spelt with

a *q*, according to the origin of the words; but you must put two points upon the *ü*, that the pronunciation may be distinguished, as in the words *qüestion*, *consequente*, &c.

4. Though the syllable *quo* ought to be spelt always with *c* and *o*, yet, according to the origin of some words, we use it on some occasions; as in *íniquo*, *próximo*, *quociénte*, *quodlibéto*, &c.

The *r* in *Spanish* has two pronunciations; one soft, expressed by a single *r*, as in *arádo*, *bréve*; and another hard, in which two *rr*'s are used, as in *bárra*, *bárro*, *cárro*, *jérro*, &c. except on these occasions:

1. In the beginning of a word two *rr*'s must never be used, because then the *r* is always pronounced hard in our language; as in the words *razón*, *remo*, *rico*, *romo*, *ruéda*, &c.

2. When the Consonants *l*, *n*, *s*, are before the *r*, either in a single word or a compound one, this letter must never be doubled, because then its sound is always strong; as in *enriquecer*, *bónra*, *desregládo*, &c.

3. The *r* after a *b* is also pronounced hard in compounds with the Prepositions *ab*, *ob*, *sub*, and yet is not doubled; because the common use of our language has followed the *Latin* Orthography, as in these words, *arrogár*, *obrépcion*, *subrépcion*. It must be observed, that, excepting these cases, the *r* is liquid after *b*, forming but a syllable with the following Vowel; as in *abreviár*, *abrigo*, *obrézo*, *brazo*, *brécha*, *brínco*, *brónco*, *irúto*; then the single *r* is made use of, because the pronunciation is soft, according to the general rule.

4. In the compounds of two Nouns, and those made with the Prepositions *pre*, *pro*, the *r* is likewise single in the beginning of the second part of the compound, though its sound is strong; therefore, according to the most constant practice, the following words should be written with a single *r*; viz. *maniróto*, *cariredóndo*, *prerogativo*, *prorogár*; and though it was in use to put a line in the middle of the compounds, it is not necessary to know their composition; therefore this trouble may be omitted.

The *f* is, without any exception, pronounced strong before the Vowels, either in the beginning or the middle of words ; and there is no particular observation to be made upon this letter, nor upon the *t*, which follows it, and the *u* Vowel.

1. The *v* Consonant is used in the words that have such letter in their origin, as *voluntád*, *vicio*, *vida*, &c. as well as such words as have been constantly spelt with a *v*, though they have a *b* in their origin ; as *vizecho*, which comes from *bis cocto*, Latin ; *y calatráva*, from *calatrabab*, Arabic.

2. In some words the *f* of the origin has been changed into *v* ; then this last will be used in their spelling ; as, *provecho*, from *profectus* ; and its derivatives or compounds, *provechoso*, *approvechar*, &c.

3. The *v* must be used likewise in some words, though their origin is not known, merely because they have constantly been wrote so ; as the following, *avida*, *alève*, *viga*, *vibuéla*, *Várgas*, *Velásco*, &c.

4. Nouns Substantive and Adjective derived from the *Latin* termination *ivus*, or formed in their imitation, should be spelt with a *v*, according to their origin, and the most constant practice ; as *donativo*, *molivo*, *comitiva*, *expectativa*, *privativa*, *pensativo*, &c. The same rule must be observed with the numerals ending in *avo*, *áva* ; as, *ochávo*, *ocháva*, and others like them.

The letter *x* has two pronunciations ; the first, derived from the *Latin*, is when this letter sounds like *c*, as in *exéquias*, *extensión*, which happens not only in the words coming from this language, but likewise from those in the *Greek*, as *syntaxis*, *extásis*. The second sound, which came from the *Arabic*, is when the *x* has a strong guttural sound, like that of the *j* before all the Vowels. and that of the *g* before *e* and *i* ; as in the words *axuár*, *almoxarife*, and other *Arabic* words, in which we frequently make use of the *x*. We pronounce also, and write, after the same manner, several words derived from the *Latin* ; as, *exemplo*, *exercicio*, *exercito* ; though the guttural sound is improperly adapted to the *x* on this occasion. This hard sound

though a little softened, is given to this letter at the end of words, as in *carcáx*, *relóx*, *dix*, *almoradúx*; and though the *j* should be made use of instead of the *x*, yet these words, and others alike, must be written with this last letter, because no *Spanish* word ends with a *j*. From these observations, the following rules are established :

1. All the words that have an *x* in their origin, must preserve the same in *Spanish*; and when it is sounded like *cs*, there must be an accent circumflex put upon the Vowel following, as a mark of its particular sound; as in *exámen*, *exáltacion*, &c.

Observe. that the *x* in the middle of a word, followed by a Consonant, is always pronounced like the English, as in *extrémo*, *expresár*, *extinguír*: wherefore the circumflex is not used, nor any other mark.

2. When the guttural sound is hard, the *x* must be used, when it is found in the origin, and agreeable to use; as *Alexándria*, *floxedád*, *díxe*, *tráxe*. The same rule is observed when the *j* of the *Latin* has been changed into *x* guttural; as *xabón*, from *japo*; *inxerír*, from *inferere*, &c.

3. The *x* must also be made use of in words whose origin is unknown, merely because they have been usually wrote with this letter; as *faxárcos*, *luxan*, *quixáda*, &c.

4. When a word ends with a guttural sound, the *x* must be preserved, as well in the Singular as in the Plural; so from *carcáx*, *relóx*, we form *carcáxes*, *relóxes*.

When we spoke of the *i*, we made the proper observations upon the *y*.

The *z* in *Spanish* has a strong pronunciation before all the Vowels; but as the *c* and the *s* have almost the same sound before the *e* and the *i*, in order to make a proper difference in spelling, the constant practice and origin of words must be attended to; therefore the following rules must be observed:

1. The *z* must be used before the Vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, having then its particular pronunciation; as in *zagál*, *zurzál*, *zámo*.

2. Before the Vowels *e, i*, the *z* should not be used, excepting when it is found in the origin, and preserved by a constant practice; as in the words *zéphiro, zizána*.

3. In the words whose Singular end with a *z*, as *púz, véz, feliz, vóz, luz, &c.* though their Plurals ending with the syllable *ces* could be wrote likewise with a *z*, preserving the same pronunciation; yet we use to spell them with a *c*, according to their Etymology; as *paces, felices, veces, voces, luces*; which must also be observed in spelling their derivatives and compounds; as *pacífico, apaciguár, felicidad, infeliciad, lucido, deslucido, &c.*

Of Accents, and other Notes for the Pronunciation.

The sounds of the letters have been already explained, and rules for the accent or quantity cannot easily be given, as they are subject to several exceptions. Such however as I have read or framed, I shall here propose.

Every word has but one accent upon the principal syllable, wherein the pronunciation is more perceived; this accent is called *acute*; and those syllables that are uttered with greater strength, are also called *acute* in *Spanish*, which is the same as *long*.

The accent of our trisyllables is frequently placed on the penultima, and on the last syllable of the words called *acute*, and upon the antepenultima of polysyllablēs, called in *Spanish* *esdrújulos*. It happens also, that by joining to the words the Pronouns *me, te, se, le, les, &c.* called *encliticks*, the accent is perceived on the fourth syllable, beginning to count from the last.

Therefore a single accent is sufficient, placed upon the Vowel of one of the said three or four syllables, to mark the pronunciation. The accent used for this purpose by the Royal Academy is the acute ('), because it is more easily formed, and has constantly been used in *Latin* to denote the acute; but as it would be a very tedious, and likewise difficult task, in writing, the accent should be only put upon the words wanting it, according to the following rules:

1. No accent should be noted upon monosyllables, because it is useless, excepting when they may be confounded, either in their pronunciation, or in their sense; in which case the monosyllable pronounced long must be accented, as in *dé, sé*, Tenses of the Verbs *dár* and *sér*, to make a distinction of the Particle *de*, and the Pronoun *se*. The Particle affirmative *sí* requires also an accent, to make a difference of the conditional *si*. The same mark should be used likewise upon the Vowels *á, é, ó, ú*, when they are Particles, not in order to denote their pronunciation, but in order to avoid their being uttered with the preceding or following word.

In dissyllables, in *Spanish*, the most common accentuation is upon the first syllable, as in *bóda, puédo*; therefore these words do not want any accent, but only when the last syllable is long, as *allá, baxó*.

3. The trisyllables and polysyllables should not be accented when their penultima is long, because this is the most frequent and common pronunciation in *Spanish*; as in *ventána, dispóngo, &c.*

4. When the antepenultima is long, it requires an accent, as in the Superlatives, *amantísimo, facilísimo*; and in the trisyllables or polysyllables, called in *Spanish* *esdrúxulos*; as, *cándido, bárbaro, intrépido, &c.*

5. Though the accent required in *Spanish* Orthography is generally used upon the three last syllables of the words, there are occasions in which, by joining to them some enclitick, the sound is perceived upon the fourth syllable, which ought to be accented, in favour of foreigners, who are ignorant of our pronunciation, as well as for the perfection of our Orthography; as in these words, *búscamelo, tráygamelo, díxgelo, &c.*

6. When the word ends with an acute syllable, the accent must be used; as in the Futures, *amaré, perderé, &c.* but it is not necessary when the word is terminated with a *y*, making a diphthong, because the last syllable is always long; as in the words *estoy, virrey*.

7. In the terminations *ea, eo*, the first Vowel is generally long, and makes by itself a syllable, without the

the following Vowel; as in *badéa*, *peléa*, *aséo*, *menéo*; therefore the accent must only be noted upon words excepted from the general rule, in which the two Vowels make one syllable or diphthong; as *línea*, *venéreo*, &c. placing the accent on the penultima.

8. For the words ending in *ia*, *ie*, *io*, and *ua*, *ue*, *uo*, a general rule cannot be given, on account of the difference in their pronunciation; but it may be observed, that an accent must be put upon the first Vowel of these terminations, when it makes a syllable by itself; as in *vacíe*, *varíc*, *desvío*, *ganzúa*, *exceptúe*, *continúo*, which will serve to mark the separation of the two Vowels in pronouncing, and to distinguish these words from others of the same termination, wherein the two Vowels are pronounced almost together, making a single syllable or diphthong; as in *ciência*, *série*, *opérúrio*, *promíscua*, *averígue*, *antíguo*; in which there being no accent, it will be easily known how to pronounce the two last Vowels.

9. Nouns terminated by some of the Consonants, *d*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *x*, *z*, have generally in *Spanish* their last syllable long; as *bondád*, *badíl*, *mechón*, *valór*, *relóx*, *embriaguéz*; therefore it is useless to accent them, excepting when their pronunciation differs from that most frequently used, as in the words *fácil*, *cánon*, *alcázar*.

10. There is a particular rule for accenting the words terminated with *s*. When in the Singular, their last syllable is generally long; as in these words, *Tomás*, *Ginés*, *arnés*, *amís*, *blandís*, *lanzós*, *quirós*; and the proper Nouns, *Aragonés*, *Portugués*, *Francés*, *Milanés*, &c. So that only Nouns excepted from this rule want an Accent, as *dósis*, *fúnes*: but, when the Nouns ending in *s* are in the Plural, the last syllable is always short, and generally the penultima is long; therefore they should only be accented when the two last syllables are short, and the antepenultima long, preserving upon this the accent of the Singular; as in *vírgenes*, *volúmenes*, *cándidos*, *intrépidos*.

11. Nouns accented, though an Adverb is made of them by adding *mente*, preserve nevertheless their accent;

cent ; as *fácilmente*, *pacíficamente*, &c. The same may be said of Verbs, when, to form the Plural, an *n* is added to the third Person Singular, or the syllable *mos* or *is* to the first Person ; as *serán*, from *será* ; and *amarémos*, *amaréis*, from *amaré*. The same must be observed when any Pronoun Personal is joined to the Verbs, as *enseñóme*, *daréte*, *mandaréos*, *quitaréñse*, *comeránlos*, &c. because the pronunciation of the word is not changed by these additions.

There are also in *Spanish* some letters or characters whose pronunciation may be doubtful ; therefore the following notes must be made use of :

1. When the *ch*, instead of following its general pronunciation, must have that of *k*, to note this sound, the accent circumflex must be put upon the following Vowel, thus, *chíron*, *chíromancia*.

2. The same accent must be put upon the Vowel following the *x*, when it is not gutturally aspirated and pronounced as the *English* pronounce it ; as in *exácto*, *exáguia*, *exímio*, *exércismo*, &c. But observe, that there are some Nouns where, in such case, the circumflex cannot be made use of upon the Vowel following the *ch* or the *x*, because, according to the general rule, they require an acute accent ; as *chímica*, *chímico*, *hexámetro*, *exámen*.

3. When the *u* in the syllables *que*, *quo*, *guz*, *gue*, requires to be pronounced, then two points, called *crema* by printers, must be put upon the *u* ; as in these words, *quejica*, *frecüente*, *agüero*, *vergüenza*, *argüir*. &c.

Observe, besides all these rules, that the accent is generally made use of upon the Vowel of the penultima when it is followed by a single Consonant ; but when this Vowel is followed by two Consonants, it is useless to accent it ; as *ilústre*, *madrístra*, *enseñanza* ; because in these words the penultima is naturally long ; excepting from this rule the words whose two Consonants are mute or liquid, because then the preceding Vowel is short ; as *álgebra*, *árbitro*, *cátedra*, *fúnebre*, *ágüie*, *quádruple*. The same accent serves also to distinguish the several Tenses of a Verb ; as *enseñó*,
from

from *enseño* ; *amára*, from *amará* ; *deseáre*, from *deseare*, &c. and the Nouns from the Verbs ; as *cántara*, a pot or pitcher, from *cantará*, he would sing, and *cantari*, I would sing.

Of Letters in Composition.

In order to form the Orthography, it is necessary to observe the modifications by which time has smoothed the roughness of words, and reduced them to the modern stile and manner of discourse ; but as there are too many who manage their own language in proportion to their genius, confounding letters together in their pronunciation, and using the Consonants at their pleasure, to avoid such abuse, it is proper to know ; *viz.*

That the springs from whence flow such variety and confusion in the *Spanish* Orthography, are the following : First, the similitude of pronunciation of some letters, whose use is so uncertain, that they are often mixed ; and, by the mere pronunciation it is difficult to distinguish their proper use. Such are the *b* and *v* Consonants, the *c* and the *z*, in the proper combinations, and in those of the *c* ; in the two Vowels *e* and *i*, the *g*, *j*, and *x* ; in the Vowels *e*, *i*, the *j* and *x*, in their entire combinations ; the *c* and the *q*, and the *g* and *b*, in the combinations where the *u* intervenes.

• Secondly, the use of the double Consonants, which are commonly found in compound words ; as *accesión*, *immortál*, *annotár*, *arreglar*, *disimular*, &c. Thirdly, the use of many Consonants that come together in several words ; as *assumpto*, *santidad*, *demonstración*, *redención*, &c. Which, being supposed, the following rules must be observed :

First, the *b* ought not to be pronounced nor written instead of the *v*, nor the *b* be confounded with the *v*, since every one knows that they are different letters, and therefore their sound is also different. To surmount this difficulty, regard must be had to the original from whence proceed the words in which these letters are found ; because if they are derived from a word written with a *b*, as *baculus*, *beatus*, *beneficium*, *bibere*,

bibere, bonus, &c. they must be written with a *b*; and if from a word written with a *v*, they must be wrote accordingly; as, *vácuo, valér, vano, vapór, vendér, venír, vida*, which are derived from the Latin *vacuus, valere, vapor, vendere, venire, vita*; for which reason, all the Imperfects of the Indicatives of the first Conjugation must be wrote with *b*, not with *v*, as ignorant persons do frequently; therefore say *amába, cantába, hablába, orába*, because they come from the Latin *amabam, canebam, loquebar, orabam*.

It must be observed likewise, that, when in the original word there is a *p*, then the *b* must be used, not the *v*; because from *caput, concipere, lupus, sapiens, &c.* come *cabéza, concebír, lóbo, sábio*.

Therefore that barbarous distinction which ignorance only introduced, that there must not be two *b*'s or two *v*'s in one word, ought to be entirely avoided; because, if they are in the root, they must be made use of; as in *barba, bebér, bárbaro, vivacidád, vivír, viviente, volvér, &c.* And, when the origin of words is doubtful, the *b* must be used rather than the *v*, the first being more agreeable to our manner of speaking than the second.

2. The *ç*, called *cedilla*, is now superfluous in the language; therefore the *z* should be used in its stead in all words whatsoever, according to the constant practice followed by the best authors in printing and writing in *Spain*.

Formerly the Verb *hacér* was wrote with a *z*, but now it is wrote with a *c*, according to its root, *facere*; preserving the same rule in all its derivatives.

3. The *g* being guttural only before *e* and *i*, it ought to be used only in the primitives and derivatives; such are *afligír, cogér, colegír, elegír, protegér, regír, &c.* writing *aflige, cóge, colige, elige, protége, ríge*, without being extended to the derivatives of *j* and *x*.

But, when the Infinitives in *gér* or *gír* change *er* or *ir* into *a* or *o* in the Present, then the *g* is changed into *j*, that the true pronunciation of the Infinitive may be preserved; so from *finjír*, say *finjo, finja*; from *regír*, *ríjo, ríja, &c.*

All words which, in their original, have, *g, i, or l*, are written in *Spanish* with *j*, not with *x*; as from *longe*, say *lejos*; from *tagus*, *iajo*; from *tégula*, *teja*; from *consilium*, *conséjo*; from *filius*, *bijo*; from *melior*, *mejor*, &c. In all the combinations of the Vowels, and when the Infinitives end in *jár*, the *j* must be kept in all the Tenses without exception. These words, *magestád*, *mugér*, *tráge*, &c. are excepted, for, common use has prevailed in keeping the *g* instead of the *j*.

If, the words have an *x* in their original, as *texér*, *exémple*, *execución*, *perpléxo*, *vexíga*, &c. it would appear ridiculous to write them with a *j*, and not with *x*; and it must be likewise observed, that, when the words have the letter *s* in their original, as *caxa*, *dexár*, *xabón*, *xéme*, *xúgo*, &c. derived from *capsa*, *deserere*, *sapo*, *semipes*, *succus*, they are always to be written with *x*, and not with *j*.

Nouns ending with *x*, as *bóx*, *baláx*, *reláx*, keep the *x* in the Plural, as well as all the Verbs which have *x* in the Infinitive Mood, are to keep it in all the Tenses; as from *baxér*, *dexár*, say *láxo*, *baxéba*, *baxé*, &c.

Q is frequently changed into *c* in vulgar writing; but the true rule is, to follow the original *Latin*, otherwise the derivation is obscured, and the pronunciation corrupted. From *c* are formed *cuéjo*, *cuérda*, *cuénta*, &c. and from *q*, *qual*, *quæstion*, *quátro*, *quánto*, &c.

It is an impropriety many fall into, to use the Vowels *e* and *i* instead of *y* and *u*; but this irregularity is cautiously avoided by all good writers, and exploded by the *Spanish* Academy, the letter *y* being established to be always a Consonant in the *Spanish* words, and the accent is always placed on the annexed Vowel; as, *ayúda*, help; *ayúno*, a fast; *arróyo*, rivulet or brook. Take care also not to put the *y* immediately before or after a Consonant, or at the end of a Verb or other word, except the following. *láy*, *ráy*, *buáy*, law, king, ox, &c.

Observe, That the *Spaniards*, in order to retain the softness of the *Latin* Consonant *j*, for want of an exact equivalent, change it into *y* Consonant; as from *adjuvare*, *jacere*, *jejunare*, they have made *ayudar*, *yacer*, *ayun-*
ar,

ár, &c. and yet, when they speak *Latin*, they pronounce *iam* instead of *jam*, *iacere* instead of *jacere*.

Of the Use of Double Letters.

The Vowels *e* and *o* are often doubled in *Spanish*, to come the nearer to the radical pronunciation; as *acree-
cór*, *creér*, *leér*, *cooperár*, *loór*, in which both the Vowels are distinctly pronounced. It is, on the contrary, wrong in some superfluously to add *e* in words derived from the *Latin*; as in *fee*, *veér*, instead of *fé*, *vér*.

The variety is greater in the use of doubling Consonants; but to avoid all affectation, and to speak properly, it is to be observed, that *c* is never to be doubled before the Vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, or Consonants; therefore you must write, *acaecér*, *acontecér*, *acomodár*, *ocasi-
ón*, *acusár*, *acumulár*, *aclamár*, &c.; but before the Vowels *e* and *i*, the *c* must be doubled in words derived from the *Latin*, as, *acelerár*, *accéssó*, *accéinto*, *occid-
ente*; excepting *acceptár* and *sucedér*; because, though in their root they have two *cc*'s, they are scarcely perceived in the pronunciation.

Latin words terminating in *ctio* change the *t* into *c*, as *acción*, *dicción*, *lección*, *producción*, to make their derivation more potent.

M, and not *n*, is always used before *b*, *m*, *p*; as in these words, *ambiente*, *immortál*, *império*.

Words compounded of the *Latin* Prepositions *in* and *con* follow the *Latin* rule of turning *in* into *im*, and *en* into *com*; as, *immaculádo*, *immediáto*, *inmemoriál*, *immortál*, &c. *commensurár*, *commovér*, *commutár*, &c. in all which words the *m* is doubled; though in several other common words one *m* is lost, as *comércio*, *común*, *comúnion*, &c. Some change *im* into *em*, as *emagrecádo*, *emmagrecér*, *emmudecér*.

N is likewise doubled in several words compounded with *an*, *en*, *in*, *con*; as, *annexión*, *annetár*, *annaturál*, *ennexión*, *ennegrecér*, *ennoblecér*, *innáto*, *innocénte*, *innocé-
cia*, &c. except *anulár*, *anunciár*, *anillo*.

The *r* is also doubled in such words as are strongly pronounced in the middle; as, *chérro*, *lórre*, *errór*,
guerra,

guerra, *pérro*, *varrígá* ; but those having only one *r* in the middle are pronounced softly ; as, *ara*, an altar ; *aréna*, sand ; *ira*, wrath. It is barbarous to begin words with two *rr*, as some ignorant people do ; because, by a general rule, the initial *r* has always a strong sound ; as, *rábia*, rage ; *razón*, reason ; *reclór*, rector ; *reñir*, to quarrel. Observe likewise, that the *r* is never doubled after any Consonant : as in *houra*, honour ; *enriquecér*, to grow rich ; *enrarecér*, to grow rare, &c. because the preceding Consonant makes the *r* strong in the pronunciation ; therefore the *r* must be doubled when between two Vowels, as in *tierra*, earth ; *errór*, an error ; *irregulár*, irregular ; *irritár*, to irritate, &c.

Though the single *s* has in Spanish the same sound as the double *ss*, yet it is to be doubled in the words that háve two *ss* in their root ; as *assár*, to roast ; *cessár*, to cease ; *esséncia*, essence ; *necessidád*, necessity. The same must be observed in the Preterimperfects of the Subjunctive Mood, *amásse*, *vendiésse*, *escribiésse* ; in all the Superlatives, as *amantíssimo*, *discretíssimo*, &c. as well as in these words, *accéssó*, access ; *congréssó*, congress ; *excéssó*, excess ; *progréssó*, progress ; and all the compounds of words beginning with *s* ; as from *saltár*, *assaltár* ; from *sentír*, *assentír* ; from *sústó*, *assustár*, &c.

The double *ll*, which in Spanish has a peculiar pronunciation, is only made use of before the Vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, but never before *i* ; and then they come from Latin words with *c*, *f*, *p*, before the *l* ; as, *lláno*, plain ; *llángo*, grief ; *lláve*, a key ; *lláma*, flame ; *llorár*, to cry ; *llover*, to rain ; *lluvia*, rain, &c.

The said Consonants are to be doubled only in the Spanish language. Nobody now does pronounce two *bb*, two *dd*, two *ss*, two *gg*, two Latin *ll*, two *pp*, two *tt*, nor double *w* ; since the Royal Academy of Madrid has softened the language by several useful observations and rules, which are constantly followed by modern authors, as well in speaking as in writing.

Etymology of the Spanish from the Latin.

There is so great an affinity between the *Latin* and *Spanish*, that several words of the former are preserved in the latter, with the same pronunciation ; but the greatest part are in the Ablative, as will easily be observed in the following terminations :

To make the *Latin* words *Spanish* :

1. The *o* is changed into *ue*, as in the following ; from *corda*, *cuérda* ; from *forum*, *fuéro* ; from *hospes*, *huésped* ; from *porta*, *puérta* ; from *mola*, *muéla* ; from *porta*, *espuérta*, &c.

2. The *u* is changed into *o* ; as from *furca*, *borca* ; from *gulosus*, *goliso* ; from *ulmus*, *olmo* ; from *stupa*, *éúpa* ; from *musca*, *mosca*, as well as in the first Persons Plural of Verbs ; from *amamus*, *amamos*, &c.

3. The Diphthong *au* is frequently changed into *o* ; as from *aurum*, *oro* ; *oculis*, *col* ; *maurus*, *moro*.

4. The *e* is also changed into *ie* ; as from *certus*, *cérto* ; from *servus*, *siérvo* ; from *cervus*, *ciérvo* ; from *herba*, *hiérba* ; from *sinistra*, *siniéstra* ; from *terra*, *tierra* ; from *fera*, *fiéra*, &c.

5. The *e* takes the place of *i* ; as from *infirmus*, *enfermo* ; from *lignum*, *leño* ; from *sicus*, *seco* ; from *signum*, *señal* ; from *sinus*, *seño*, &c.

6. The *b* is also changed very frequently into *p*, since, according to *Quintilian*, they were often mistaken in the pronunciation formerly ; which is very probable, for both letters are uttered by the same motion of the lips ; and the *Germans* in our times still confound these two letters. The same *Quintilian* says, that the *Latin* word *priges* was anciently used instead of *briges* ; and so the *Spaniards* used to put the *b* instead of *p* ; as from *apricus*, *abrigo* ; from *capra*, *cabra* ; *capillus*, *cabéllo* ; *caput*, *cabéza* ; *capere*, *cabér* ; *opera*, *obra* ; *sapor*, *sabór*, &c.

7. The *b* is changed into *d* ; as from *cubitus*, *codo* ; *habitare*, *dudór* ; *palpebra*, *parpados*.

8. The *c* is put several times instead of the *g*. According to *Isidore*, they have so great an affinity, that

they may in some combinations be easily mistaken one for another in pronouncing ; so from *dico*, we say *digo* ; from *acutus*, *agúdo* ; from *amicus*, *amigo* ; from *mica*, *miga*, &c.

9. *Cl* is changed into *ll*, with our peculiar pronunciation ; *clamare*, *llamar* ; *clavis*, *llave*.

10. When the *c* in *Latin* is followed by *t*, this letter is changed into *b* ; as from *cinētus*, *cincho* ; *dictus*, *dicho* ; *factus*, *hecho* ; *lectum*, *lecho* ; *lucta*, *lucha* ; *nocte*, *noche* ; *lacte*, *leche* ; *oculo*, *ocho* ; *pectus*, *pecho* ; and several others.

11. The *d* of the *Latins* is also sometimes lost ; as from *cadere*, *caér* ; from *rodere*, *roér* ; from *radius*, *rayo* ; from *excludere*, *excluír* ; from *audire*, *óír*.

12. The *f* we have changed into *b*, only to soften the pronunciation ; as from *filius*, *bijo* ; from *facere*, *hacér* ; from *formosus*, *bérmoso* ; from *facienda*, *baciénda* ; from *fervor*, *hervór*.

13. The *g* is changed into *i*, when it is not pronounced ; as from *regnum*, *réino*. Sometimes it is quite left out ; as from *digitus*, *dedo* ; from *frigus*, *frio* ; from *sagitta*, *saéta* ; from *vagina*, *veína*, &c.

14. The *j* is placed instead of the *l* ; as from *allium*, *ajo* ; *articulus*, *artégo* ; *alienum*, *agéno* ; *folium*, *bója* ; *consilium*, *conségo*, &c.

15. The *r* is also changed into *l* ; as from *arboris*, *árboles* ; *cerebrum*, *célebro* ; *periculum*, *péligro*.

16. The *n* is sometimes added, some times take off ; as from *insula*, *isla* ; *ruminare*, *rumiár* ; *sal nitrum*, *salitre* ; *sponsus*, *espóso* ; *macula*, *máncha*.

17. The double *nn* of the *Latin* is changed in *Spanish* into our *ñ* ; as from *annus*, *año* ; and sometimes the same happens to the single *n*, and *nn* ; as from *aranea*, *aráña* ; *autumnus*, *otóño* ; *Hispania*, *España* ; *damnum*, *dáño* ; *vinea*, *viña*. As this sound of the *ñ* is proper to the nation, they have adapted it according to the language, or for the difficulty they found in pronouncing as the *Latins* did.

18. The *p* is changed very often into a double *p* when in the *Latin* word an *l* is found after *p* ; as from

plaga, llaga; planctus, llanto; planus, llano; plenus, lleno; ploro, lloro; pluvia, lluvia.

19. The *q* is changed into *g*; as from *aliquis, alguno*; from *antiquus, antiguo*; from *aqua, agua*; from *aquila, águila*.

20. The *t* is likewise altered into *d*; as from *catena, cadena*; from *fatum, bado*; *latus, lado*; *natare, nadar*; *pietas, piedád*; *pater, padre*; *mater, madre*, &c.

Observe, that these alterations are not general in all the words, but are used in several, because on some occasions, the *Latin* word is preserved, without any mutilation or variation.

It is very much in use in *Spanish* to change letters, or to add to the *Latin* words, when there is an *l* or *r* after *b*, in order to soften the pronunciation; as from *admirabilis, laudabilis, admirable, laudable*.

The termination of the other words ending in *ilis*, in *Latin*, is *il* in *Spanish*; as from *facilis, fácil*, from *debilis, débil*; from *finalis, final*; from *materialis, material*.

It would be endless to pretend to shew all the affinity between the *Spanish* and the *Latin*, the main body of the former being derived from the latter, with only such small difference as may easily be conceived from what has been said above.

Observe besides, that we add an *e* in *Spanish* before *st* or *sp* in *Latin*, when these two letters begin the word; as from *strepitus, estrépito*; from *stomachus, estómago*; from *speculari, especular*; from *spectaculum, espectáculo*; &c.

Several OBSERVATIONS to serve as a Supplement to the Syntax.

Of the Article.

THE Definite Article is made use of only before Substantives, as it has been said, and never before Adjectives, except those used substantively with the neutral Article *lo*; as *lo bueno, lo hermoso, lo grande*, &c.

This Article is never used before the Pronouns, except before the Possessives Relative, *mio, tuyo, suyo, nuestro, vuestro, suyo*, and before the Relatives *que* and *qual*, as well as before the Infinitive, when made a Substantive before the Pronouns Possessives ; as in these examples :

Pedro es tu amigo y también el mio, Peter is thy friend, as well as mine ; *Mi casa y la tuya estan contiguas*, My house and thine are very near ; *Mi mugér y la suya son amigas*, My wife and his are good friends ; *Cuidaré de vuestros cabállos como de los nuestros*, I will take care of your horses as of ours ; *Me inquiéto de mis negocios y no de los vuestros*, I mind my business, and not yours ; *Das de comér a tus hijos, y el à los suyos*. You maintain your children as he does his own.

The improper Pronouns, *uno, una, otro, otra, que, qual*, require likewise the Definite Article, when used as Relatives. Ex. *El uno es hombre de bien y el otro es un pícaro*, One is an honest man, and the other is a rogue ; *El uno es mas docto que el otro*, One is more learned than the other ; *Del qual habláis, del padre ó del hijo ?* Who do you speak of, of the father or the son ? *Lo mio y lo tuyo divíden los mejores amigos*, Mine and thine parts the greatest friends ; *El comér y el beér mucho, destrúye la salud*, Over-eating and over-drinking destroy health.

There are also some Adverbs preceded by the Neutral Article *lo*, as the following : *Lo mejor que pudiere*, The best I will be able ; *Lo menos que fuere posible*, The less it will be possible ; *En lo que dice hay lo mas y lo menos*, There is more or less in what you say ; *Dígame el quando y el como*, Tell me when and how.

Of the Use and Concordance of Nouns.

It is a general rule in *Spanish*, as well as in *Latin*, that the Adjective must agree with the Substantive in Gender, Number, and Case ; as, *Dios todo poderé*, God Almighty ; *El hombre sabio*, The learned man ; *La mugér indiscreta*, The indiscreet woman, &c. This is very

very easily understood, especially by those who know Latin; but it is not so easy to know when the Adjective ought to be put before the Substantive, and when after; therefore I will endeavour to explain it as clear as possible.

1. Participles, taken adjectively, must go after Substantives; as, *una casa derribada*, a demolished house; *una iglesia construída*, a church built; *una plaza sitiada*, a besieged place; *un general vencido*, a general overcome.

2. Nouns of colour follow the same rule; as, *blanco*, white; *negro*, black; *colorado*, *incarnado*, red; *verde*, green; *amarillo*, yellow; *azul*, blue. Ex. *Un vestido blanco*, a white dress; *un sombrero negro*, a black hat; *medias coloradas*, red stockings; *chupa verde*, a green waistcoat, &c.

3. The elemental qualities; as, *caliente*, hot; *frio*, cold; *seco*, dry; *humedo*, damp; *templado*, temperate. Ex. *Agua caliente*, hot water; *tiempo frio*, cold weather; *leña seca*, dry wood; *aire humedo*, a damp air, &c.

4. Nouns of measure; as *largo*, long; *corto*, short; *ancho*, wide; *estrecho*, narrow; *alto*, high. Ex. *Un vestido largo*, a long dress; *una capa corta*, a short cloak; *una chupa ancha*, a wide waistcoat; *un zapato estrecho*, a strait shoe; *una torre alta*, an high tower.

5. Nouns of blaming or praising, expressing good countenance, presence, or bad quality; as, *sábio*, wise; *prudente*, prudent; *perfecto*, perfect; *docto*, learned; *hermoso*, handsome; *fiel*, faithful; *vicioso*, vicious; *cojo*, lame; *abominable*, abominable. Ex. *Una muger prudente*, a prudent woman; *obra perfecta*, a perfect work; *un estudiante docto*, a learned scholar; *un Rey sábio*, a wise King; *una donzella hermosa*, a handsome girl; *un criado fiel*, a loyal servant; *un hombre vicioso*, a vicious man; *un caballo cojo*, a lame horse; *una vida abominable*, an abominable life, &c.

6. The names of nations follow also the same rule; as, *la política Italiana*, Italian politics; *la gravedad Española*, Spanish gravity; *la ligereza Francésa*, French levity; *la generosidad Inglesá*, English generosity; *la borrachera Alemana*, German drunkenness; to which

you must add Nouns ending in *ico* ; as, *palácio magnífico*, a magnificent palace ; *un hombre fantástico*, a fantastic man, &c.

The above rule is not general ; there are several exceptions and occasions, when Adjectives expressing praise, blame, good or bad quality, not only may go before the Substantives, but ought also absolutely to precede them ; therefore I shall give a list of the Adjectives subject to this alteration, and give examples afterwards.

Buen, buéno, buena, malo, mala, good, bad.

Lindo, linda, handsome.

Féo, fea, ordinary, ugly.

Falso, falsa, false.

Grande, great ; *joven*, young ; *pobre*, poor.

Rico, rica, rich ; *verdadero, verdadera*, true.

Agradable, pleasing ; *bizárro, bizarra*, gallant.

Poderoso, poderosa, powerful ; *valiente*, brave.

Firme, firm ; *único, única* ; only.

Examples.—*Hémos comido una buena perdiz*, We have eat a good partridge ; *La perdiz que hémos comido era muy buena*, The partridge we have eaten was very good.

He hablado con un mal hombre, I have spoken with a wicked man ; *El hombre con quien he hablado es muy malo*, The man I have spoken to is very wicked.

La Reyna de Inglaterra es una linda princesa, The Queen of England is a very pretty princess ; *La Reyna de Inglaterra es una princesa muy linda*, The Queen of England is a very pretty princess ; *Que fea muger es la Duquesa de !* What an ugly woman is the Duchess of ! *La Duquesa de . . . es muy fea*, The Duchess of . . . is very ugly.

Falso ataque, a false attack ; *falsa bráya, fausse braye*, (a term of fortification signifying a small mount of earth, four fathoms wide, erected on the level round the foot of the rampart ;) *una mula falsa*, a vicious mule ; *falso pícaro*, a treacherous cheat ; *Este hombre es muy falso*, This man is very false ; *un gran Rey*, a great King ; *El Rey es muy grande*, The King is very great.

Un Príncipe joven manifestó mucho valor, A young Prince shewed great courage ; *No pelées con este soldado joven,* Do not fight with this young soldier.

Es un pobre hombre, It is a poor man ; *Que pobre soldado !* What a pitiful soldier ! *El Rey de Marruecos es un Príncipe muy pobre,* The King of Morocco is a very poor Prince.

Un rico mercader, a rich merchant ; *un comerciante rico de cien mil pessos,* a tradesman worth one hundred thousand dollars.

Es un verdadero pícaro, He is a true cheat ; *Juan es muy verdadero,* John is a man of great veracity.

La Reyna es una Princesa agradable, The Queen is a very agreeable Princess ; or, *La Réyna es una agradable Princesa.*

El Infante es un bizárro Príncipe, The Infant of Spain is a fantastic Prince ; *Pedro es muy bizárro,* Peter is very gallant.

El Príncipe de Brunswick es un valiente general, The Prince of Brunswick is a great general ; or, *El Príncipe de Brunswick es un general muy valiente.*

Una firme resolución, a firm resolution ; *tierra firme,* the main land.

El único remedio es este, The only remedy is this ; *La muerte es mi remedio único,* Death is my only remedy.

Of Adjectives taken substantively.

There are two sorts of Adjectives used in Spanish Substantives : some only to diversify the language, and some to abbreviate it, putting the attribute of a Noun instead of the Noun itself.

The Adjectives *verdadero*, true ; *falso*, false ; *buéno*, good ; *malo*, bad ; *posible*, possible ; *imposible*, impossible ; are of the first class ; because when I say, *Dió en lo verdadero*, He ascertained the truth ; *acusado de crimen de falso*, accused of forgery ; *lo buéno del cuento*, the best of the affair ; *lo malo de todo esto*, the worse of all this ; *hacer lo posible*, to make what is possible ; *intentar lo imposible*, to try what is impossible ; then

verdadero is put instead of truth; *falso*, for falsehood; *buéno*, for goodness; *malo*, for badness; *posible*, for possibility; *imposible*, for impossibility; because, though it is not usual to say, *la maldad de todo esto*, the badness of all this; *hacer la posibilidad*, to make the possibility; *tentar la imposibilidad*, to try the impossibility; yet, all this is expressed when the Adjective is used substantively; though it could be said in another manner; as, *hacer todo lo que es posible*, to make all that is possible; *tentar aún lo que es imposible*, to try yet what is impossible. But as all Adjectives cannot be made use of in this manner, custom must be followed.

The number of Adjectives used instead of Substantives, whercof they are attributes, is very great: they are of two sorts; some made use of instead of things, and others instead of persons.

The first are *honésto*, honest; *útil*, useful; *agradable*, agreeable; as, *Lo honésto se debe preferir a lo útil y a lo agradable*, That which is honest is preferable to what is useful and agreeable. *Lo honésto*, *útil*, and *agradable*, are taken for an honest, useful, and agreeable thing. They say also, *lo alto de una torre*, the top of a tower, &c.

Adjectives representing persons follow always the Gender of the person they speak of; therefore we say, *El sabio de nada se espanta*, A learned man wonders at nothing; *Una casada há de observár las leyes del matrimonio*, A married woman must observe the laws of matrimony. For the same reason, we use to say, *los escogidos*, the elect people; *los predestinados*, the predestinate people; *los condenados*, the damned.

Lastly, the Adjectives are also used substantively with some Verbs, especially with the Verb *preciarse*, to boast of; as, *Se precia de sabio*, He boasts of being learned; *Se precia de valiente*, He boasts of being valiant; *Pícase de generoso*, He pretends to be generous.

Of Adjectives used as Comparatives.

If we attend to the word *comparative* in all the extension of its signification, we ought to join to the
Adjectives

Adjectives Comparative all those shewing parity or disparity, either by themselves, as *iguál*, equal; *desiguál*, unequal; *conforme*, conform; *diferente*, different; or by the help of some Adverbs; as, *Es grande como tu*, He is as great as thee; *El uno es tan valiente como el otro*, The one is as valiant as the other. It is not in that sense that I speak here of Adjectives Comparative, but only of those meaning comparison of quantity, either by themselves, or by the help of the Adverbs *mas*, more; or, *menos*, less.

According to this principle, I say, the first are; *mejor*, better; *peor*, worse; *menor*, less; which have been taken from the *Latin*: the second are, all the Adjectives Positive admitting of the junction of the Adverbs *mas*, more; *menos*, less; *mejor*, better; *peor*, worse; and *menor*, lesser; which are Comparatives by themselves, as well as *grande*, great; *pequeño*, little; and generally all the Nouns made a Comparative of by adding *mas*, more, or *menos*, less, which become then Compound Comparatives.

On all these occasions, in order to join the first term of Comparison with the second, the Particle *que* is made use of; as, *El vino es mejor que la cerveza*, Wine is better than beer; *La fiebre es enfermedad menor que la peste*, The fever is a distemper less than the plague; *Pedro es mas grande que Juan*, Peter is greater than John; *El perro es mas pequeño que el león*, The dog is less than the lion.

Observe, that the Adjectives *superior* and *inferior*, do not admit of *mas* or *menos* before them, because they include in themselves the Comparison; wherefore they require not *que* before the second term, but the Particle *à*; as, *El uno es inferior à el otro*, One is inferior to the other; *El otro es superior à este*, The other is superior to this.

Of Adjectives Superlative.

The *Spanish* language has entirely retained from the *Latin* the manner of forming one of its Superlatives; I say one, because there are two ways of expressing it; the

the first by placing the Adverb *muy*, very, before the Adjective ; as, *Es muy docto*, He is very learned ; the second by adding *ísimo* to the Adjective ; as, *Es doctísimo*, He is very learned.

Observe, that there are also Adverbs formed of these last Superlatives ; as from *amantísimo*, comes *amantísimamente* ; from *benignísimo*, *benignísimamente* ; from *bellísimo*, *bellísimamente*, handsomely, &c.

When there is a comparison made, then the Article *el*, the, is put before *mas*, more ; as, *Es el mas sábio de todos los hombres*, He is the most learned of all men ; *Es la mas linda mugér que se pueda vér*, She is the most pretty woman that one can see.

Of Numbers.

I have already, in the beginning of this Grammar, mentioned the Numbers ; but now I shall explain the use of them in speaking ; observing, that there are five sorts of Numbers : the first are the Cardinals or principals, as, *uno*, one ; *dos*, two ; *tres*, three ; &c. the second Ordinals ; as, *primero*, first ; *segundo*, second ; *tercero*, third ; *decimo*, tenth ; *vigésimo*, twentieth ; *trigésimo*, thirtieth ; *centésimo*, hundredth ; *milésimo*, thousandth. 3. The Collectives ; as *una docéna*, one dozen ; *una quinzéna*, one fifteen ; *una veinténa*, one twenty, &c. 4. The Distributives ; as, *el quinto*, the fifth part ; *el octavo*, the eighth part, &c. 5. The Augmentatives ; as, *el doble*, the double ; *el triple*, the treble.

The three last of these numeral Nouns are always Substantives, and the two first Adjectives ; as, *un hombre*, a man ; *dos hombres*, two men, &c. *una mugér*, a woman ; *dos mugéres*, two women, &c. *el primér dia*, the first day ; *el segundo dia*, the second day ; *el tercero dia*, the third day, &c. *la priméra semana*, the first week ; *la segunda semana*, the second week : *la tercera semana*, the third week, &c. But as there is no rule without an exception, they are sometimes made use of as Substantives, as you shall see in the following observations,

1. All Nouns of the Ordinal Numbers are Substantives, when they are used alone without any other Substantive; as in this sentence, *Tres esta comprehendido dos veces en seis*, there is twice three in six; where you may see, that *tres* and *seis* are employed substantively, and not adjectively; as *en una vez*, one time; wherein *vez* is the Substantive; and *una* the Adjective.

2. All Nouns of Number are also taken as Substantives, when preceded by an Article; as, *el cinco de bastos*, the five of clubs; *jugár à los cientos*, to play at piquet; or when they are with another Noun, as, *un siete*, a seven. They say also, *un ciento de manzanas*, one hundred of apples; *dos cientos de castañas*, two hundred of chesnuts.

When they speak of the hours, they say in *English*, "I arrived at one, at two o'clock;" but in *Spanish* we say only, *à la una*, *à las dos*, *à las tres*, *à las quatro*, &c. and so on till twelve, when they say, *à las doze del dia*; or *à las doze de la noche*, at noon-day, or at midnight; which is not only used for the hours, but also to express the days of the month, or to date any act; as, *Llegó à quétro de Mayo*, He arrived the fourth of May; or, *Londrés y Diziembre veinte de 1765*, London, the 20th December, 1765: yet the Cardinal Number is used when the Ordinal is with a Substantive; as, *Murió el dia cinco de Agosto*, he died the fifth of August.

Of the Ablative Absolute.

The manner of speaking called by Grammarians *Ablatives Absolute* has been carefully preserved by the *Spaniards* in their language, and with great reason, since it is one of the shortest and most handsome idioms they have from the *Latin*, as you may see in these examples: *Acabáda la comida se fué a caza*, After dinner he went a hunting; which is better than if they were to say, *después de comer*, after dinner; therefore, instead of saying, *El negocio habiendo sido puesto en consideración, sentenciaron los juéces*, it is better to say, *La cosa puesta en deliberación, los juéces sentenciaron*. After considering

considering the affair, the judges gave their verdict. It is also more elegant to say, *La batálla ganáda, se rindió la plaza*, 'The battle being gained, the place surrendered, than *Despues que la batálla fuéssé ganáda*, 'After the battle was gained.

Of the First Pronoun Personal.

The first observation we must make upon this Pronoun is, that it is common to both Genders, and is always declined with the indefinite Article, *a* and *de*, as we shall see in the examples.

The second, that instead of having two first Pronouns Personal, as in other Languages, they have only one in *Spanish*, as well as in *English*, which is *yo*, I; placing it immediately before or after; as, *yo sóy*, I am; *yo hago*, I make; *yo canto*, I sing; or interposing a Particle; as, *Yo os afféguro que no le conózco*, I assure you that I do not know him. But you must observe, that this Pronoun *yo* is seldom made use of before the Verb; for the variation there, as in the termination of each person, renders it useless; except on some occasions, which I am going to explain.

The Pronoun *yo* is used before the Noun and titles of a noble person; as, *Yo Don Pedro de Mendóza, gobernador de Cadiz, &c.* I Don Pedro de Mendoza, governor of Cadiz; *Yo Catalina de Benavides, Duquesa de Gándia, &c.*

When *yo* ought to be put after the Verb, which should be in the Interrogations, then it is never made use of; so when in *English* they say, Where am I? What shall I say? in *Spanish* we must say, *Adonde estoy? Que diré?* When in a parenthesis, it must be made use of; as, *Los Catalánes (le díxe yo) fueron rebéldes*, The Catalans (said I to him) were rebels.

When one is of an opinion contrary to that of another, this Pronoun *yo* is always expressed, as well as in the sentences where the second or third Pronoun Personal is made use of before the Verb; as, *Tu quíeres bailar, y yo jugar*, Thou desirest to dance, and I to play; *Tu*

vás á Paris, y yo á Londres, Thou goest to Paris, and I to London; *Pedro canta, y yo llóro*, Peter sings and I cry; *Vos le veréis, yo no*, You shall see him, I not; that is, I shall not see him. *Yo* is also used when an absolute command is given; as, *Yo soy quien os manda hacer esto*, It is I who order you to do this.

You must observe, that the above rules serve also for the Pronouns of the second and third Person.

The first Pronoun Personal is very differently used in the Dative, because sometimes they make use of *me*, sometimes of *mi*; as, *Pedro se me entregó*, Peter surrendered to me; *Dió me un regalo*, He gave me a present.

They use also *mi* instead of *me*, when this Pronoun is governed by some Adverb or Preposition; as, *Trabaja para mi*, He works for me; *Ha hablado contra mi*, He spoke against me, &c. As the above rules serve as well for the second as for the first^a Personal, I will speak of the third.

Of the third Pronoun Personal.

The third Pronoun Personal is not, like the first and second, of both Genders; there is one Masculine, *el*, he, and the other Feminine, *ella*, she, for the Singular; *ellos*, they, for the Plural Masculine, and *ellas*, they, for the Plural Feminine; for which last there is no distinction in *English*, being expressed by *they*, as well as the Pronoun Masculine. After this observation, I will shew the use of this Pronoun.

Its most common use is before the Verb it governs; as, *El ama*, He loves; *Ella lee*, She reads; and then nothing is placed between them, except some Pronoun or negative Particle; as, *El se pasea*, he walks; *Ella no le quiere*, She does not love him; *Ellos se fueron*, They went away; *Ellas no lo dijeron*, They (speaking of Women) did not say it.

But you must observe, that this Pronoun, as well as the first and third, is usually left out, excepting when two Pronouns of different Persons are met with

with in the same sentence ; as, *Yo leo y él escribe*, I read, and he writes ; *Ella va à passear y tu à la yglesia*, She goes to take a walk, and thou goest to church ; *Vosotros queréis mandar, y ellos no quieren obedecer*, Ye like to command, and they will not obey ; *Nosotros venimos temprano, y ellas tarde*, we (men) came soon, and they (women) came late.

Of Pronouns Possessive.

The Pronouns *mi*, *tu*, *su*, my, thy, his, are made use of with a Substantive only, as in *English* ; as, *Déme mi sombrero*, Give me my hat ; *Manda à tu criado*, Command thy servant ; *Obedece à su padre*, He obeys his father ; *Embía me mis pistólas*, Send me my pistols ; *Conserva tus vestidos*, Preserve thy cloaths ; *Miguél desprecia à sus amigos*, Michael despises his friends ; where you may observe they have only one termination in the Singular and Plural.

In *English* the third Pronoun Possessive is divided into three, viz. *his*, *her*, and *its* ; but all these are expressed in *Spanish* by *su* ; as, *Dé su libro à mi hermana*, Give her book to my sister ; *Pon la llave en su agujero*, Put the key in its hole ; which is observed as well in the Singular as in the Plural Number.

The Pronouns *mio*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, mine, thine, his, or their, are made use of, either to answer questions about property ; as, *Cuyo es este caballo ?* Whose horse is this ? *Mio*, mine, &c. or with an Article, to represent a Substantive mentioned before ; as, *Tu padre y el mio*, Thy father and mine ; *Mi madre y la tuya*, My mother and thine ; *Tu hermana y la suya*, Thy sister and his ; *Tus amigos y los mios*, Thy friends and mine ; *Mis plumas y las tuyas*, My pens and thine ; *Tus camisas y las suyas*, Thy shirts and his ; *Nuestra casa y la vuestra estan vecinas*, Our house and yours are near ; *Vuestros soldados y los nuestros pelearon*, Your soldiers and ours fought ; *Vos queréis à vuestros hijos, y ellos à los suyos*, Ye love your children, and they love theirs.

What must be more particularly taken notice of is ; that these Pronouns become Substantives on two occasions ;

caſions ;

cations; the first, by putting the Neutral Article *lo* before them; as, *Lo mio*, that which is mine (my property); *lo tuyo*, thy property; *lo suyo*, his property; as, *Lo mio y lo tuyo han causado muertes, r6bos, incendios à mill6res de mill6nes*, What is mine, and what is thine, has caused thousands of millions of murders, robberies, and fires; *À cada uno, lo suyo*, To every one his property. But observe, that it has neither Singular nor Plural, Masculine nor Feminine.

The other occasion when these Personals Possessives become Substantives, is when they are used in the Plural Masculine; as, *los mios, los tuyos, los suyos, los nuestros, los vuestros, los suyos*, which signify *my parents, thy parents, &c. or my soldiers, my friends, &c.* expressing persons with whom we are united, either by friendship, relation, or party: so they say in Spanish very concisely, *Yo y los mios*, I and my friends; *Tu y los tuyos*, Thou and thy friends; *El y los suyos*, He and his friends; *Nosotros y los nuestros*, We and our friends; *Vosotros y los vuestros*, Ye and your friends; *Ellos y los suyos*, They and their friends; and this Pronoun can never be used but to signify this.

Of Pronouns Demonstrative.

The Pronouns Demonstrative are three in Spanish, as we have said in the Declensions; the first is *este, esta, esto*, and signifies *this*; the second, *esse, essa, eso*, that; the third, *aquél, aquélla, aquéllo*, which signifies likewise *that*; but with this difference, that *este* and *esse* is made use of to denote any thing or person present, or which may be seen; but *aquel* is employed to express what is far remote, and at the greatest distance; so they say, *esta pluma*, this pen; *esse espejo*, that looking-glass; *aquélla ciudad de Paris*, that city of Paris. But observe, that *essa* is used in writing to any person to express the place or town wherein he lives; as, *Hé hablado en essa (ciudad) con muchos amigos*, I have spoken in your city with many friends; *Hay en essa muchas fábricas*, There are in your town many manufactures. *Este* and *aquel* are also used in comparisons, either of men or things; and then *este* signifies the last

last thing or person spoken of, and *aqué*l the first; as, *Carlos fue gránde, Fredérico ambicióso; este valiente, aquél poderóso*, Charles was great, Frederick ambitious; the first powerful, the last courageous; where you may see, that *este* represents Frederick, and *aqué*l Charles.

*Aqué*l is used also to shew contempt; as, *Que quiere aquél hómbré?* What does that man desire? *Aqué*l hómbré es un pícaro, That man is a rogue.

Of Interrogatives.

The Pronouns Interrogative are, *que*, what; *quien*, who; and *qual*, which, as we have explained it in the beginning of this Grammar.

The first thing to be observed is, that *que* is either Masculine or Feminine, Plural or Singular; as, *Qué hómbré es este?* What man is this? *Qué muger es esta?* What woman is this? *Qué hómbrés son éstos?* What men are these? *Qué mugéres son estas?* What women are these?

This Pronoun is so much used in *Spanish*, that I think it necessary to explain here all its several significations.

It is used as a Substantive, and signifies *what, what thing*; as, *Que le succedió?* What happened to him? *De qué se quéxa?* Of what does he complain? *De qué sirve la razón con él?* Of what avail is reason with him? Sometimes *que* signifies *what for*; as, *A qué vino?* What did he come for? *A qué tanto ruido?* What so great a noise for? It is also used with Prepositions; as, *Con qué se mantiene?* What does he maintain himself with? *En qué passa su tiempo?* What does he spend his time in? *De qué se hace esto?* From what is this done?

Quien, who, is always used to denote a person in the Interrogation, and never any thing else; as, *Quien es?* Who is there? *Quien ha hecho esto?* Who has made this? *Quien es el pintór del Rey?* Who is the King's painter?

Qual, which, is made use of on the very same occasions as in *English*; with only this difference, that there is the Plural, *quáles*; but it is common to both Genders;

Genders ; as, *Qual es el mas alto de estos dos ?* Which is the tallest of these two men ? *Quales son las mas hermosas de estas mugéres ?* Which are the most handsome of these women ?

Of Relatives.

The Pronouns Relative are, *que*, who ; *el qual*, which ; *cúyo*, whose : though some grammarians count ten of them, these four only deserve that name ; the others being indefinite, I will speak of them afterwards.

The Pronoun *que*, who, is relative when it follows a Substantive ; as, *El hombre que os habló*, The man who spoke to you ; *La mugér que queréis*, The woman you love ; *La desgracia que le acaeció*, The misfortune that happened to him. This Pronoun, as a Relative, expresses generally persons and things animated or not ; as, *Un hombre que habla*, A man who speaks ; *Una mugér que llóra*, A woman who cries ; *Un perro que ladra*, A dog that barks ; *La dama que amáis*, The lady you love ; *La espáda que llevas*, The sword you bear ; *La casa que vendió vm.* The house you sold ; *La cama en que duérmo*, The bed I lie in.

On several other occasions, where there is relation, the Pronoun *que* is not used, but *quien*, or *el qual*, to express Persons ; and they only put *el qual*, speaking of things not animated, or of beasts, without ever making use of *quien* in such circumstances ; as, *El hombre de quien*, or, *Del qual es hijo*, The man whose son he is ; *El caballo del qual me sirvo*, The horse I ride upon ; *La razón de la qual me valí*, The reason I made use of.

Of Indefinites.

There are two sorts of Pronouns Indefinite ; the first are those used to denote only persons ; the second, those that serve to denote persons as well as things. The first are, *quien*, nádie, the last, *ningúno*, none ; *otro*, another ; *cada uno*, every body ; *cada*, each ; *ciérto*, certain ; *mismo*, same ; *algúno*, some ; *tal*, such ; *todo*, all ; *qualquiér*, whatever.

Among all these Pronouns, some have only one termination, and are common to all Genders; as, *quien*, *nadie*, *cada*, *tal*; the others have two terminations, that is, Masculine and Feminine; as, *ninguno*, *otro*, *cada uno*, *cierto*, *mismo*, *alguno*, *todo*.

Amongst those of one termination, and common to both Genders, there are three without a Plural, viz. *nadie*, *cada*; but *quien* and *tal* have their Plural, *tales* and *quienes*, common to both Genders. All the others with two terminations have likewise their Plural; but you must observe, that the Plural of *qualquiera* is irregular, and makes *qualesquiera*.

All Pronouns Indefinite are affirmative, excepting *ninguno* and *nadie*, which are negative; as, *Alguno de estos soldados*, Some of these soldiers; *Cada Rey cuida de sus estados*, Every King takes care of his states; *Quien es virtuoso, merece ser alabado*, Who is virtuous deserves to be praised; *cierto personaje*, a certain great person; *Otro dia vendré*, I will come another day; *Mucho vino perturba la razón*, A great deal of wine disturbs the sense; *Cada uno se retiró*, Every one went away; *Ninguna muger puede resistir à la vanidad*, No woman can resist pride; *Ella misma vino*, She came herself; *Alguno de ellos me habló*, Some of them spoke to me; *Muchos se resolvieron*, Many took the resolution; *Tal me podría hablar*, Such a one could speak to me; *Todo hombre que quiere ser estimado, debe vivir bien*, All men that desire to be in esteem, must live well; *Ningun hombre de bien, puede decir esto*, No honest man can say this.

The above are examples of all the Pronouns Indefinite; but we will treat of each in particular, for the better intelligence of the reader.

Of all the Pronouns, *quien* is certainly the most indefinite; it is a Substantive, and declined without the Indefinite Articles *à* and *de*; it has the property of being sufficient to two terms of relation, as well as the Indefinite *que*; as, *A pesar de quien quisiere resistir me*, In spite of any who intend to resist me; *Habla de esto à quien le quiere escuchár*, He speaks of this to any person who hears him; *Tenia orden de*
prender

prender à quien passasse por allá, He had he order to arrest any person passing by ; *Se despedía muy presto de quien le havia hecho agrávio*, He parted directly from any person who had affronted him.

In all these examples, you see that *quien* has two terms of relation, and two cases. In the first, it is in the Genitive, with the term *pesár*, that governs it ; in the second, it is in the Dative, because *hablar* governs the Dative, and it serves as a Nominative to the Verb following ; in the third, it is in the Accusative, as governing the second ; and in the fourth, it is relative to the Verb *despedirse*, and in the Ablative, being likewise the Nominative of the Verb *hacer*.

Nadie is negative, as well in *Spanish* as in *English*, signifying *nobody* ; consequently a negation ought never to be put with the following Verb, which is made negative by this Pronoun ; so you must not say, *No ama nadie al mal*, but *nadie ama el mal*, Nobody likes pain.

When there is with the Verb an exclusive Preposition, *nadie* must never be used, but *algúno*, or *alguna* ; as, *Vivir sin aggraviar à algúno*, To live without offending any body ; *No depende de algúno*, or *De nadie depende*, He does not depend on any person ; *Nadie hay quien te ame tanto*, There is nobody who loves you so much.

The Pronoun Negative *ningúno*, none, follows the same rules ; as, *Ningúno lo ha visto*, Nobody has seen it ; *Se fué solo*, He went without any body, &c.

About the Pronoun *otro* there is only a little observation to be made, that it signifies *another*. Nobody says, *en otro hombre*, *una otra mugér*, but *otro hombre*, *otra mugér*, another man, another woman.

The Pronoun *cada*, each, is applied either to persons or things ; it has no Plural, and is common to both Genders ; as, *cada hombre*, each man ; *cada mugér*, each woman ; *cada caballo*, each horse ; *cada casa*, each house. The Noun following *cada* cannot on any occasion be put in the Plural Number.

When the numeral *uno*, one, is joined with *cada*,

then *uno* must agree in Gender with the following Substantive ; as, *Cada uno de estos soldádos meréce ser premiádo*, Every one of these soldiers deserves to be rewarded ; *Cada uno de estos cabállos come una medida de cebáda*, Every one of these horses eats a measure of barley ; *Cada una de estas donzéllas havía de sér casáda*, Every one of these virgins ought to be married ; *Cada una de estas casas tiéne véinte quartos*, Each of these houses has twenty rooms.

When *cada uno* is applied to persons, it has sometimes a general and indefinite acceptation, signifying either men or women ; as, *Cada uno quiere sér estimádo*, Every one likes to be esteemed ; *Cada uno ha de morir*, Every person must die. Sometimes it is said in a more limited acceptation, signifying properly every person, and it signifies both man and woman ; as when a man or woman says, speaking of one's self ; *Cada uno hace lo que se le antója*, Every one acts as he likes ; *Cada uno debe saber lo que le conviene*, Every one must know what is convenient to him. Except upon this occasion, that this Pronoun has always some reference to the term preceding or following it, having a distributive rather than a collective signification, wherein it may admit one or other Gender, according to that of the term of its relation ; as, *Todos le acometiéron y cada uno le dió una puñaláda ; todas las mugéres tomaron las armas, y cada una peleó animosamente*, All the women took up arms, and every one fought courageously.

Cierto, certain, is rather an Adjective than a Pronoun ; only it must be observed, that it agrees always with its Substantive in Gender and Number ; as, *cierto hombre*, a certain man ; *cierta mugér*, a certain woman. It is also used with things ; as, *He visto ciertos paños muy finos*. I have seen certain cloths very fine ; *Esta noticia es cierta*, This news is certain.

Mismo, same, sometimes is a Pronoun, and sometimes an Adverb ; but I will speak of it here, considered as a Pronoun, and, in this quality, it has several meanings ; because sometimes it denotes individual

dual identity, sometimes it shows parity or equality ; and, at other times, it serves to give more energy to the expression.

In the two first acceptations, denoted in *Latin* by *idem*, this Pronoun is joined with any sort of Substantives, and must agree with them in Number and Gender. It must be put immediately before the Noun, in the cases of identity, as well as of parity ; as, *El mismo hombre me dixo*, The same man told me ; *Tiene siempre los mismos criados*, He keeps always the same servants ; *Habita en la misma casa*, He lodges in the same house ; *Dos hombres del mismo talle*, Two men of the same shape ; *Dos flores del mismo olor*, Two flowers of the same smell ; *Dos negocios de la misma importancia*, Two affairs of the same consequence.

Sometimes the Pronoun *misimo* is relative, and must agree with the Noun Substantive of its relation, that is understood ; as, *El hombre de quien me hablas, es el mismo que yo te decia*, The man thou speakest of is the same I told you ; *Su modo de vivir es siempre el mismo*, His manner of living is the same.

When the said Pronoun is made use of merely to give more strength to the expression, it must agree with its Substantive in Gender and Number ; as, *El Rey mismo estaba presente*, The King himself was present ; *Dios lo manda, y la razon misma lo requiere*, God commands it, and reason itself requires it. On several other occasions, sometimes it may be considered as a Pronoun, and sometimes as an Adverb. Considered as a Pronoun, it answers to the *Latin* Pronoun *ipsa* ; but considering it as an Adverb, it answers to the *Latin* Adverb *etiam*, or *quin etiam*, but, on any of these occasions, it never is a Relative.

Mismo is also frequently added to some other Pronoun, only by way of energy, and, then, it always is a Pronoun. It is joined to the Pronouns Personal, *yo*, I ; *tu*, thou ; *el* or *aquel*, he ; *ella*, she ; and with their Plurals ; as, *Yo mismo lo vi*, I saw it myself ; *Tu mismo puedes juzgarlo*, Thou art able thyself to judge it ; *El mismo*, or *ella misma me habló*, He or she spoke to me

himself or herself ; *Nosótro* *mismos*, or *nosótras* *mismas* *cuidarém* *de* *sus* *negócios*, We will take care ourselves of your affairs ; *Vosótro* *mismos*, or *vosótras* *mismas* *podeis* *acabá**rio*, You are able yourselves to finish it ; *Ellos* *mismos*, or *ellas* *mismas* *contribú**yen* *a* *su* *desdicha*, They contribute themselves to their misfortune. The same Pronoun is likewise used with the Demonstratives, *este*, *esse*, *aquel*, or *estótro*, *esótro*, and must agree in Gender and Number with them ; as, *Este* *mismo* *es*, This is the very same man ; *Esta* *misma* *es*, This is the very same woman ; *Esto* *mismo* *es*, This is the thing itself.

Mismo is also joined with the Possessives *mio*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, after the same manner as above ; as, *Es* *esta* *tu* *casa* ? *La* *mia* *misma* ; Is this thy house ? It is itself. And so in the answers made to any question.

Observations upon the Moods and Tenses of Verbs.

It is not sufficient to know all the Verbs of a language. In order to speak properly, one must be acquainted with the rules of construction particular to every language, according to its genius. The rules I am going to give, are certain, and may be depended on by the reader.

All the Tenses of the Indicative Mood may, in general, be employed without any Preposition or Conjunction before them ; but they admit also of some. Besides the Conjunction *que*, those that may be made use of are *si*, *como*, and *quando*, with some distinction in respect to *si*, because this distinction is seldom used before the Future Tense, and then it is governed by a Verb, meaning ignorance, doubt, or interrogation ; as in these examples : *Ignóro* *si* *há* *de* *venír*, I do not know if he shall come ; *Dudo* *si* *los* *enemígos* *passará* *el* *rio*, I doubt if the enemies will pass the river ; *No* *pregúnto* *si* *partirá*, I do not ask if he will set out ; *No* *trato* *de* *sabér* *si* *lo* *hará*, I do not want to know if he will do it.

The Imperative Mood is always made use of, without any Preposition, either in commanding, forbidding, permitting, entreating, or exhorting. The Third Persons Plural and Singular are excepted, because, then, *que* goes always before, being preceded by another Verb; as, *Mándo que se vaya*, I order him to go away; *Quiéro que bayle*, I desire him to dance. But when the third Person Imperative is not preceded by another Verb, then the Particle *que* is left out; as, *Haga esto*, Let them do this; *Venga à mi casa*, Let him come to my house.

The Conditional, or, as it is most commonly called, the Optative or Conjunctive Mood, is certainly the less absolute of all; because of the six Tenses of this Mood, only the three last are used without being governed by a Particle or Preposition. The three first Tenses require always a Particle or Preposition, except the Present; before which, though *que* is not expressed, it is understood, in sentences of wishing or praying; as, *Dios le haga bueno*, Let God amend him.

When the Particle *que* is used for one of these three Tenses, or when it is alone, or does follow another Verb, it is joined with some other words. *Que* alone denotes wishing, praying, admiring, or refusing; as *Que yo muera*, Let me die; or, *Que yo me meta en estos negocios*, *no lo he de hacer*, That I meddle with these affairs, no, I shall not do it.

There are many words joined with *que*, of which we shall speak when treating of the Prepositions and Conjunctions; as, *para que*, in order that; *con que*, *con tal que*, *como que*, provided that, &c.

When *que* is between two Verbs, the last is not always put in the Subjunctive; because one cannot say *Créo que venga*, I believe he comes; but *Créo que viene*. But when there is a negation, the Verb following *que* must be put in the Subjunctive; as, *No créo que venga*, I do not believe he will come; *No sé que haya venido todavía*, I do not know if he is yet come; *No créo que venga tan presto*, I do not believe he will come so soon.

If the sentence is interrogative, and *que* comes between two Verbs, the last must be in the Subjunctive; as *Sabe vm. que se haga afsí?* Do you know that it is done so? *Acáso crée que esto puéda ser?* Does he believe that this is possible?

- All the Verbs used impersonally with the Particle *que* require the Subjunctive; as, *Es menéster que venga*, He must come; *Es precíso que se váya*, He must absolutely go; *Impórta, conviéne que esto se haga*, It is convenient that this be done. You must only except such sentences as exprefs any positive assurance or certainty; as when one fays; *Es cíerto que viéne*, It is certain that he comes; *Es constánte que pagará*, It is constant he will pay. So you must fay, *Créo, piénso, me imagino, sé que está en fu casa*, I believe, I think, I know he is at home.

From these observations, it follows, that all the Verbs not expreffing a positive belief, as *estímo, piénso, créó*, but only denoting ignorance, doubt, fear, astonishment, admiration, wishing, praying, intention, pretension, or desire, govern all the Subjunctive Mood after *que*; as, *Ignóro que háya de venir*, I do not know if he will come; *Dudo que lo puéda*, I doubt it be in his power; *Me temo que muéra*, I am afraid he will die; *Me espánto que lo quiéra*, I am astonished at his wishing it; *Admiro que consienta à effo*, I wonder he should agree to it; *Deséo que prospere*, I wish he may prosper; *Le fúplico que no me maltráte*, I entreat him not to abuse me; *Preténdo que me obedézca*, I pretend his obeying me; *Quiéro que venga*, I desire him to come. To all which you may add *óxala*, an Arabic word, signifying *God grant*, which is used in Spanish before all the Tenses of the Optative or Conjunctive, as well as *Plegue à Dios*, May it please God; or, *Pluguéffe à Dios*, Might it please God.

When *que* is relative, and there is a Verb in the Imperative with a negative or an Interrogation before, it governs likewise the Subjunctive; as, *No hay cosa que me inquiete tanto*, There is nothing that disturbs me more; *Hay cofa en el mundo, que me puéda dár tanto gufto?*

Is there any thing in the world that may give me more pleasure ? *Dé le tantas razones que le puedan persuadir*, Give him so many reasons, that he may be persuaded.

As the Infinitive denotes only something indefinite, it may also be used in an absolute manner on these two occasions; the first, to express some general maxims; as, *Saber vivir con sígo mismo, y con los otros es la mayor ciencia de la vida*, To know how to live with one's self, and with others, is the greatest science of life : Or, in certain proverbial sentences ; as, *Decir y hacer son dos cosas*, Saying and doing are two different things. On several other occasions, the Infinitive is governed by Prepositions or Conjunctions ; as, *Sin decir palabra*, Without speaking a word : Where you may observe, it is expressed in *English* by the Participle Present ; as, *Después de haver hablado assi*, After having spoken so ; *Por haver sacado la espada*, For having drawn the sword ; *Para saber esto*, In order to know this ; *Por falta de hacer reflexión*, For want of reflecting ; *Antes de hablar*, Before speaking. The Infinitive is also governed by Verbs ; as, *Es menester remediar à esto*, One must remedy this ; *Debe venir*, He is to come ; *Quiero casarme*, I want to be married ; *Qualquiera puede engañarse*, Any person may deceive himself. Or by Verbs followed with the Particles *à* or *de* ; as, *Empieza à discurrir*, He begins to reason ; *Se aplica à cumplir con sus obligaciones*, He is very strict in doing his duty ; *El Rey ha sido servido de mandar*, The King has been pleased to order. Or by Nouns with the Particle *de* and *para* ; as, *Gana de reír*, Desire of laughing ; *Deséo de vivir*, Desire of living ; *Habil para suceder*, Apt to succeed ; *Dispuésto à hacer bien* ; Inclined to oblige.

The Gerund of any Verb active may be conjugated with the Verb *estar*, to be, after the same manner as in *English* ; as, *Estoy escribiendo*, I am writing ; *Estoy leyendo*, I am reading ; *Estaba dormiendo*, He was asleep. Sometimes *en* is also put before, then it signifies *after* in *English* ; as, *En haviendo hecho, iré*, As soon as, or after, I have done, I shall go ; but this Preposition is very seldom made use of before the Gerund ; as will be easily observed.

Observations upon the Use of the Tenses of every Mood.

After having treated of the Moods, we must now speak of the Tenses of every Mood.

Of the Moods of Verbs, the Indicative is that which has more Tenses, which are either *simple* or *compound*; that is, formed of the Verb, or of its Participle Passive, and the Auxiliary Verb *haver*, to have. But, as the Present Tense denotes only an instant, it cannot be divided into several Tenses, and therefore has only one single form; as, *Amo*, I love; *Deséo*, I desire; *Soy*, I am; *Hé*, I have, &c. But the *Preterite* or *Past*, which has only three Tenses in *Latin*, has five in *Spanish*, viz. two *simple*, and three *compound*. The first is commonly called *imperfect*, that is, a Tense not quite past, because it serves to mean a thing or an action begun, but not yet finished; it denotes that the thing was present, in a determinate past Tense; as *Escribía quando llegó*, I was writing when he came in. It is so easy to know this Tense, that it does not want any more explanation.

But it is not the same with respect to the *Preter-imperfect*. All the Grammarians say, that this denotes a past thing, in such a manner that nothing remains of the time in which it was doing; but they do not all agree about its denomination, because some call it *Preterite Indefinite*, and others *Preterite Definite*. But, as I think it is rather *indefinite* than *definite*, I will give it the first name, because it is never made use of but to express part of another day, and never of the day present; as, *Escribí abier*, I wrote yesterday; but not *Escribí esta mañana*, I wrote this morning. But this rule wants more explanation.

The *Preterite Definite* cannot be used in *Spanish*, when speaking of one day, one week, one month, or one year, if we are in that same day, week, month, or year, we speak of: therefore, though you may say very well, *El día de abier fue muy lindo*, The day of yesterday was handsome; you cannot say, *Nuestro día fue*

ſue memoráble, Our age has been memorable ; becauſe, in the firſt example, the time they ſpeak of is entirely paſt, and in the ſecond, it is not yet elapſed, ſince we are in that ſame age we ſpeak of.

The Compound Preterites are three ; as, *He amádo*, I have loved ; *Húve amádo*, I had loved ; *Havía amádo*, I had loved. The ſecond is not much uſed, as we have ſaid in the beginning of this Grammar ; and there is no particular obſervation to be made upon the others, no more than upon the other Moods and Tenſes.

How to make Uſe of the Tenſes of Spaniſh Verbs.

It is not ſufficient to know the Tenſes of Verbs ; one muſt likewiſe be acquainted with the rules which teach how to uſe them in *Spaniſh*, where one Tenſe is often put inſtead of another.

The Preſent is uſed inſtead of the Future, after the ſame manner as in *Latin* ; as, *Antequam pro Murena dicere incipiam* is expreſſed in *Spaniſh*, *Antes que me empreñe en hablár à favór de Muzéna*, Before I undertake to ſpeak for Muzena, *Priusquam de republica dicere incipiam* in *Spaniſh* ſignifies *Antes que empiéze à hablár de la republica*, Before I begin to ſpeak of the republic.

It is by following the ſame idioms as its mother the *Latin*, that the *Spaniſh* language uſes very often the Future inſtead of the Preſent, after the Particles *ſi*, *quando*, &c. as, *ſí or quando viniére le recibiré como debo*, If or when he comes, I will receive him as I ought ; which is the ſame idiom as in *Latin*, *odero, ſi potero*. But, as uſing one Tenſe inſtead of another, or the Subjunctive inſtead of the Indicative, depends on the Conjunctions preceding the Verb, when I ſpeak of them, the reader may obſerve theſe idioms.

Of Government of Verbs.

The Verb Active governs always the Accuſative in *Spaniſh*, as well as in other languages. So they ſay, *Deſco la paz*, I deſire peace ; *Práctico la virtúd*, I practice virtue, &c. But you muſt obſerve, that the Particle

Particle *à* is always put before the Accusative, when it means a person or reasonable creature ; as, *Amo à Pedro*, I love Peter ; *Imito à los santos*, I follow the saints ; *Adóro à Dios*, I adore God. Yet sometimes this Particle is used before inanimate things ; as, *Los enemigos sitiáron à Namur*, The enemy besieged Namur. But the use of the Particle *à* is not necessary in this last circumstance, being a mere pleonasm.

The Verb Passive Governs the Ablative ; as, *La virtud es amada de todos los hombres de bien*, Virtue is loved by all honest men. You may also say, as in English, *Por todos*, &c. By all, &c.

The Neutral Verbs generally govern the Dative ; as, *Agradár al Rey*, To please the King ; *Obedecér à las leyes*, To obey the law ; *Dañar à su enemigo*, To hurt the enemy. I said generally, because some Neutrals having in themselves the term of the action, never govern any Noun ; as, *obrar*, to act ; *dormir*, to sleep ; *hablar*, to speak ; *caminar*, to walk fast, and some others. Though they contain in themselves the term of the action, they govern the Ablative ; as, *Salir de la cárcel*, To go out of prison ; *Huir de un lugar*, To fly from a place ; *Hablar de un negocio*, To speak of an affair.

Besides these Neutral Verbs, there are also two other sorts : the first are those called Neutrals Passive ; as, *arrepentírse*, to repent ; *acordárse*, to remember ; whose Pronoun is in the Accusative, and the following Noun in the Genitive ; as, *Me arrepiento de esto*, I repent of this ; *Siempre me acordaré de mis amigos*, I will always remember my friends. The second sort are those Verbs which, from Actives, are made Reciprocals, by the addition of the Pronoun Personal, sometimes in the Accusative, and sometimes both in the Accusative and Dative ; as, *Imaginárse ciertas cosas muy agradables*, To fancy very agreeable things ; *Quemárse los dedos*, To burn one's fingers ; *Cortárse la mano*, To cut one's hand ; *Amárse à sí mismo*, To love one's self ; *Quemárse à sí mismo*, To burn one's self ; *Matárse à sí mismo*, To kill one's self. But the Passive Reciprocals as, *dedicárse*, *aplicárse*, are always conjugated with the Pronoun Personal.

After the Verbs Substantive, *sér* or *estár*, to be, *para* is made use of, as well as *à*. The first is employed to denote the use or destination of any thing; as, *Este caballo es para vendér*, This horse is to be sold; *Esta pluma es para escribír*, This pen is to write with. But the Particle *à* is used to denote only the Action, without destination; as, *El priméro à corrér*, The first to run away; *El último à callar*, The last to be silent.

Que is always made use of after the Verbs *haver* or *tenér*, to have, or before the following Infinitives; as, *Algo tengo que decíros*, I have something to tell you; *Que tienes que respondér*? What have you to answer? *He aqui cartas que escribír*, There are letters to write; *Hay mucho que hacér*, There is a great deal to do.

The Particle *à* follows always the Verb *ír*, to go, either before a Verb or before a Noun; as, *Voy à oír el sermon*, I am going to hear the sermon; *Voy à comér en casa de mi amigo*, I go to dine at my friend's; *Fué à la iglesia*, He went to church. The same rule serves also for the Verb *vení*r, to come, when it does not express motion; as, *Vengo à pagár*, I come to pay; *Vengo à comér con vm.* I come to dine with you. But when the Verbs *vení*r and *volver* express some motion from one place to another, they are followed by the Particle *de*; as, *Vengo de la iglesia*, I come from the church; *Vuelbo del campo*, I return from the country.

Verbs denoting *obligation* or *engagement*, govern the following Infinitive with the Preposition *à*; as, *Le obligaré à hacér esto*, I will oblige him to do it; *Le precijaré à sacár la espáda*, I will force him to draw the sword; *Le forzaré à seguir mi opinion*, I will compel him to follow my opinion. But the Verbs meaning *praying*, *entreating*, or *forbidding*, govern the Infinitive without any Preposition; as, *Suplicó-le hacér me este gusto*, He entreated him to do me this pleasur. , *Ruego te olvidar lo pasado*, I pray thee to forget what is past; *Me prohibió ír à la corte*, He forbade me to go to court. The Verbs expressing some order follow the same rule; as, *El Rey me manda tomar las armas*,
The

The King commands me to take up arms. But it is proper to observe, that the same Verbs govern likewise the Subjunctive, when the Particle *à* is followed by *que* ; as, *Me obliga à que haga esto*, He obliges me to do this ; *Me precisa à que me vaya*, He forces me to go away. The Verbs meaning *entreating*, *prohibiting*, or *ordering*, govern likewise the Subjunctive with the Particle *que* only ; as, *Me ruega que venga*, He desires me to come ; *Me prohíbe que vaya à la corte*, He prohibits me to go to court ; *El Rey me manda que le sirva*, The King commands me to serve him.

Verbs denoting *custom*, *help*, *obstination*, *preparation*, *beginning*, *condemnation*, *destination*, *disposition*, *exhortation*, *invitation*, require only the Infinitive with the Particle *à* ; as, *Acostumbrarse à dormir*, To be accustomed to sleep ; *Ayudár à sembrár*, To help sowing ; *Obstinarse à jugar*, To be obstinate at play ; *Prepararse à partir*, To prepare to set out ; *Empezár à bailar*, To begin to dance ; *Condenár à uno à sér ahorcado*, To sentence one to be hanged ; *Le destinó à servir al Rey*, He destined him to serve the King ; *Se dispone à pagar sus deudas*, He is preparing to pay his debts ; *Me solicita à quebrantár mi palabra*, He desires me to break my word ; *Me convidó à cenár*, He invited me to supper.

Verbs meaning *abstinence*, *privation*, or *end*, have the Infinitive with the Particle *de* ; as, *Me abstengo de beber vino*, I abstain from drinking wine ; *Me desacostumbro de cazár*, I lose the custom of hunting ; *Acábo de comér*, I have just dined.

The Verb *ponérse*, when it signifies to *begin*, must have the Infinitive with the Particle *à* ; as, *Ponérse à llorár*, To begin to cry. But when it signifies to *meddle*, it governs the Infinitive with the Particle *en* ; as, *No me pongo en hacer esto*, I do not meddle with doing this. *Metérse*, to put one's self, has the same signification, and follows the same rule.

There are some other Verbs, as *esmerarse*, to endeavour, *empeñarse*, to engage, which also require the Infinitive

infinitive with the Particle *en* ; as, *Me esmeraré en hacer esto bien*, I will endeavour to do this well.

Verbs joined with a Noun which they govern must have the Infinitive with the Particle *de* ; as, *Licencia tengo de ir à Londres*, I am permitted to go to London ; *Tengo gana de reír*, I am inclined to laugh ; *He menester de comér*, I want to eat ; *Veo una ocasión de hacer fortuna*, I see an occasion of making my fortune ; *Me há dado motivo de quejarme*, He has given me reason to complain ; *Túvo la desvergüenza de insultár me* ; He had the impudence to abuse me ; *Halló los medios de enriquecerse*, He found the means of growing rich.

Verbs denoting knowledge, science, believing, hoping, confessing, protestation, affirmation, and the Verb *desír*, to say, must have the following Verb in the Indicative, preceded by *que* ; as, *Se que es hombre de bien*, I know he is an honest man ; *Conózco que erás inocente*, I am certain you was innocent ; *Créo que se burla de mí*, I believe he makes game of me ; *Espéro que me servirán v. md. en esta ocasión*, I hope you will serve me on this occasion ; *Confesso que tengo la culpa*, I confess I am blámable : *Afirmo que lo ha hecho*, I affirm that he did it ; *Digo que vendrá*, I say that he will come. But observe, that this rule does not extend itself to all Verbs in all the Tenses, because those shewing believing and hoping require after them the Subjunctive, when they are in the Imperfect ; as, *Creía que vendría*, I believed he would come ; *Esperaba que partiría*, I expected he would set out. When the same Verbs are accompanied with a negative, they must be followed by the Subjunctive with *que* ; as, *No créo que sea tan bueno*, I do not believe he is so good ; *No espéro que venga*, I do not expect he will come ; *No confesso que esto sea así* ; I do not confess it is so ; *No asseguro que sea verdad*, I do not assure you it is true.

The above Verbs govern also the Subjunctive, when the conditional *si* precedes them : as, *Si sabes que haya de venir*, If you know that he will come ; *Si juzgas ó crees que lo pueda hacer*, If you believe he may do

do it ; *Si esperás que te ayúde*, If you hope he will help thee ; *Si confiéssa que haya hécho esto*, If he confesses he has done this ; *Si afirmas que séa verdád*, If you affirm that it is true. Though the Verbs after *sí* are in the Indicative in the above examples, they are likewise used either in the Indicative or the Present Subjunctive, and also in the Future Subjunctive, when it means something to come ; as, *Si viniére, le verémos*, If he comes, we shall see him ; *Si succediére assi*, If it happens so.

The Verbs *pensár*, to think, *estár*, to be, when it signifies *to understand*, require after them the Infinitive with *en* ; as, *Pensába en hacér esto*, I was thinking about doing this ; *Estóy en que se ha de hacér*, I understand it must be done.

OBSERVATIONS on PREPOSITIONS.

Of the Preposition à.

A is a Particle indeclinable, serving in the composition of many Nouns, Verbs, and Adverbs, of which it often increases, diminishes, or changes the meaning ; as, *arrodillárse*, to kneel down, a Reciprocal Verb Neutral, which is formed from *à* and *rodilla*, knee. *Adinerádo* signifies *rich*, having a great deal of money, and is made from *à* and *dinéro*, money. *Abáxo* is an Adverb, and signifies *below* ; and it is composed of *baxo*, low, and the Preposition *à*.

A is also put before the Infinitive of certain Verbs, without being preceded by any Noun, and then it may be changed into the Gerund ; as, *A vér lo que passa, quien no dixéra ?* In seeing what passes who should not say ? It is the same to say, *Viéndo lo que passa*.

A is also put before Infinitives preceded by another Verb ; as, *Enseñar à cantár*, To teach to sing ; *Empezár à baylár*, To begin to dance ; *Provocar à jurár*, To provoke to swear. It is also placed between two equal

equal numbers, to denote order ; as, *Dos à dos*, Two by two ; *Viniéron quatro à quatro*, They came four by four.

A is likewise made use of on several other occasions before Nouns.

Of the Preposition De.

This, as a Particle, is used as a sign of the Genitive and Ablative Cases, as we have said in the beginning of this Grammar. The several uses of *de* in *Spanish* may be reduced to five ; viz.

1. To denote the quality of a person or thing.
2. The matter a thing is made of.
3. To express the place from whence one comes.
4. The manner of acting.
5. To denote the means or cause of a thing.

Yet, in all these acceptations, *de* is rather a sign of the Genitive or Ablative than a Preposition.

Of the Prepositions En and Dentro.

The Prepositions *en* and *dentro* have very near the same signification ; therefore they may sometimes be used the one instead of the other ; as in this sentence, *Está en el quarto*, or *Dentro del quarto*, He is in the room. But they cannot be always used indifferently ; as you may see by the following observations :

When you speak of a time past, you must always use the Preposition *en* ; as, *Hé leído las obras de Quevedo en quinze dias*, I have read the works of Quevedo in fifteen days. But when the action is to be done in a time to come, then you must put *dentro*, and not *en* ; as, *Iré à vér le dentro de ocho dias*, I will go and see you this day se'nnight ; *El Rey llegará dentro de tres semanas*, The King will come in three weeks.

Dentro signifies properly *within*, in *English*, and *en*, in, being used in the same occasions and sense.

En is also sometimes joined with *quanto* ; as, *En quantó à mí*, For what concerns me ; *En quanto à este negócio*,

negócio, About this affair ; *En quanto me conviène*, As much as is convenient to me.

Sometimes the Preposition *en* signifies *with* in English ; as, *Andar en seguro*, To go with surety ; *Hablar en confianza*, To speak with confidence ; *Pasear en buena compañía*, To walk with a good company.

Sometimes *en* signifies *as* ; as, *En agradecimiento de los favores que he recibido*, As an acknowledgment of the favours conferred upon me ; *En señal de amistad*, As a token of friendship.

Of Antes, Delante, and Ante.

The Preposition *antes* serves to denote priority of time ; as, *Antes del deluvio*, Before the deluge ; *Antes de tres meses*, Before three months. Priority of order or situation ; as, *Poner una cosa antes de la otra*, To put one thing before another. Sometimes it means preference, and signifies *rather* ; as, *Antes morir que ser vencido*, Rather to die than to be conquered. But it is not followed by the Particle *de*, as in all the other occasions, as well before a Noun as before a Verb ; as, *Antes del dia*, Before day ; *Antes de irse*, before going.

Delante is also followed by the Particle *de* before a Noun, and serves to denote the order or situation of persons and things ; as, *Delante de mi casa*, Before my house ; *Iba delante de mi*, He went before me. It means likewise the *presence* ; as, *Estaba delante del Rey*, He was before the King ; *Está delante de Dios*, He is before God, signifying *he is dead*.

The Preposition *ante* governs the Accusative, and is only used in law by notaries, &c. as, *Ante mi señalamiento, real y del número*, &c. Before me, royal notary of the number, &c. They never make use of *ante* on any other occasion.

Of Cerca and Acerca.

The Preposition *cerca* serves to express proximity of time, place, or a near disposition to any thing ; and, in all

all these acceptations, it governs the Genitive, being followed by *de* before either a Noun or Verb; as, *Es cerca de medio día*, It is near twelve; *Está cerca de la puerta*, He stands near the door; *Está muy cerca de morir*, He is dying; *No está cerca de llegar*, He is not near to arrive.

Acérca is a compound of the Particle *a* and *cerca*, signifying *about*, sometimes *near*; as, *Acérca de esto le dije*, About this I told him; *Acérca de ir allá le respondí*, About going there I answered him; *Tiene mucho crédito acérca del gobernador*, He is in great credit with the governor. By these examples you may observe, that this Preposition requires also the Genitive before a Noun or Pronoun, and the Particle *de* before the Verbs in the Infinitive.

Of the Prepositions Después and Tras.

The Preposition *después* serves to express posteriority of time, or inferiority of place; so it is used in opposition to the Prepositions *antes* and *delante*. There is, notwithstanding, a difference, that before the Nouns it may be used as well as a Preposition of time or of order; but before the Infinitives it is always a Preposition of time, followed by *de*. When the Particle *que* is joined to it, then it denotes only the time; as, *Después del diluvio*, After the deluge; *Después de medio día*, After mid day. It is a Preposition of place; as, *Su lugar viene después del mío*, His place comes after mine; *No debe andar sino después de mí*, He must go only after me. But when *después* governs by itself a Verb in the Infinitive, it is a Preposition of time; as, *Después de pelear se retiró*, After fighting he retired. It is the same when followed by *que*; as, *Después que lo hice becho*, After doing it.

These two Prepositions *trás* and *después* express the same thing, and are used indifferently, on several occasions; as, *Después de esto*, or *trás de esto*, After this; *Venía después de mí*, or *trás de mí*, He came after me. Only before Verbs *trás* is not made use of, because then it signifies *besides*.

You must observe, that *déspués* *trás*, or *detrás*, govern always the Genitive before Nouns and Pronouns; and the Infinitive with the Particle *de*, when before a Verb.

Of the Preposition Con.

This Preposition signifies *with*, and is of the greatest use in the *Castilian* language; it governs the Accusative, and denotes *conjunction*, *union*, *mixing*, *assembling*, *keeping company*, *mean*, *instrument*, and *manner*. Besides, it is used in other senses, of which I will treat afterwards.

Con expresses *conjunction* in the following examples; as, *Casár una donzella con un hombre de bien*, To marry a maid with an honest man; *Vivir Christianamente uno con otros*, To live as Christians together; *Estár bien con todos*, To be well with every body.

It denotes *mixing*; as, *Echár poco vinagre con mucho azéite*, to pour a little vinegar with much oil; *Construir con arena y cal*, To build with sand and lime.

It denotes *assembling*; as, *Ir con uno*, To go with one; *Entretenérse con algúno*, To converse with somebody; *Comér con sus amigos*, To eat with one's friends; *Estár con gente honrada*, To be with honest people.

It serves also to express the means by which something is done; as, *Con el socorro de Dios*, By God's help; *Con valór y ánimo*, With courage and spirit; *Con mucho tiempo*, With a long time; *Con qué quíeres remediar esto?* With what will you remedy this? *Con dinero todo se hace*, With money all is done.

Lastly, it denotes the manner of doing something; as, *Habla con eloquencia*, He speaks eloquently; *Con dignidad*, With dignity; *Con arrogancia*, With arrogance; *Responde con cordura*, He answers with wisdom or wisely; *Sufre con constancia*, He suffers with firmness.

Observe, that, when the two first Pronouns Personal and the Reciprocal, follow *con*, you must say, *Con mí*, not *con me*, With me; *Con tigo*, With thee; *con sí*, With himself.

Entre signifies *between* or *among*, in *English*; and, as it is never used in any other sense, there is no particular observation to be made upon it.

Observations upon the Preposition Para.

One must take great care not to confound the Preposition *para* with *por*, both signifying *for*; because each of them has its particular use.

Para is put before Nouns, and it governs the Accusative, or before the Infinitive of Verbs, without any Particle. But when it is before any other Mood or Tense, *que* is joined to it.

This Preposition is used to denote the end or motive of doing any thing; as, *Trabajo para el bien público*, I work for the public good; *Nada se hace para el estado*, Nothing is done for the state; *Para que tiene el hombre razón?* For what is man endowed with reason?

Para is also used to express the cause of doing something; as, *Dios creó el universo para el hombre*, God created the world for man. It denotes usefulness; as, *Un hospital para los pobres*, An hospital for the poor; *El dinero es para gastar le*, The money is to spend.

Para is a Preposition of time; as, *Me basta esto para todo el año*, This is sufficient to me for all the year; *Se han unido para siempre*, They are united for ever; *Para dos meses era poco*, For two months it was too little. These are the several senses of this Preposition before Nouns and Pronouns. Let us now see how it is used before Verbs.

The first use of *para* before Verbs is to shew the intention or purpose of doing something; as *El hombre ha sido criado para amar à Dios*, Man has been created to love God, *El comer es necesario para conservar la vida*, Eating is necessary to preserve life; *Todo lo hace para alcanzar un empleo*, He does every thing to obtain an employment.

Para serves likewise before Verbs to denote what one is able to do in consequence of one's present disposition; as, *Es bastante fuerte para montar*, He is strong

strong enough to ride; *Harto caudál tiene para mantenerse*, He has means enough to maintain himself; *La ocasión es demasiado favorable para dexarla escapar*, The occasion is too favourable to let it slip.

This Preposition expresses also the capacity of doing any thing; as, *Es hombre para acometerle*, He is a man able to attack him; *Es hombre para resistirle*, He is capable of resisting him; *No es hombre para esto*, He is not the proper man wanted for this; *Es hombre para nada*, He is good for nothing.

Para is placed before Verbs in the Infinitive without any Particle or Preposition; as, *Para ser docto, o menester estudiar*, In order to be learned, one must study; *Para ser rico, se ha de trabajar*, To be rich, one must work. *Que* is joined to *para* before the other Moods and Tenses of Verbs; as, *Para que sea esto mejor*, In order to make this better; *Para que Dios nos bendiga*, In order to obtain the blessing of God.

Of the Preposition Por.

The Preposition *por* signifies *through*, denoting the efficient cause of a thing or an action, and the motive and mean of it. These are its principal meanings, though it is used on several occasions:

Sometimes it signifies *by*; as, *Por la gracia de Dios*, By the grace of God; *España fue conquistada por los Romanos y los Alcoros*, Spain was conquered by the Romans and the Moors; *Por su descuido lo perdió todo*, By his negligence he lost all; *Por este medio lo logrará*, By this mean he will obtain it.

Por denotes the motive of an action; *Habla por envidia*, He speaks through envy; *Todo lo hace por pasión*, He acts always by passion; *Castiga por venganza o por cólera*, He chastises through vengeance or passion.

Sometimes *por* expresses the means made use of, or contributing to something; as, *Llegar á sus fines por astucia*, To come to one's ends with or by craftiness; *Agradar á todos por su prudencia*, He pleases every body by his prudence.

This Preposition signifies also *for* and *through* ; as, *Lo hizo por mí*, He did it for me ; *Por el amor de Dios*, For God's sake ; *Pasé esta mañana por la calle de —*, I passed this morning through the street of — ; *Vió por todos los Reinos de la Europa*, He travelled through all the kingdoms of Europe.

Of the Prepositions Más acá, *This side* ; Más allá, *That side, or further* ; and Además, *Besides*.

Más acá, and más allá, are two Prepositions of place, and govern the Genitive ; as, *Los que están mas acá de los Pirineos*, Those who are on this side the Pireneans ; *Los que viven mas allá de los montes*, The people who live beyond the mountains.

Además, besides, is a Preposition denoting *augmentation* or *addition*, and requires the Genitive of the Nouns or Pronouns following ; as, *Además de todo esto*, Besides all this. When it is before the Infinitive of Verbs, it retains the Particle *de* ; as, *Además de querer cantar, aún quería bailar*, Besides singing, he desired also to dance. When any other Mood than the Infinitive is made use of, then *además* is followed by the Particles *de que* ; as *Además de que me reñía, me quería pegar*, Besides scolding, he wanted also to beat me.

Of the Preposition Debáxo.

The Preposition *debáxo*, under, denotes the time and place, I say the time or denomination of a reign or government ; as, *Debáxo del imperio de Augusto*, Under the empire of Augustus ; *Debáxo del consulado de Pompeyo*, Under the consulate of Pompey ; *Debáxo del reinado de Jorge Segundo*, Under the reign of George the Second.

Debáxo, as a Preposition of place, is a great deal more used, and marks out always inferiority of position ; as, *Todo lo que hay debáxo de los cielos*, All that is under heaven ; *Lo que hay debáxo de la tierra*, All which is under the earth ; *Tenér una almohada debáxo de las rodillas*, To have a cushion under the knees ; *Llevar algo*

algo debáxo de la capa, To carry something under the cloak ; *Dormir debáxo de un árbol*, To sleep under a tree.

This Preposition is also made use of in the following sentences: *El ejército está debáxo del cañon de la plaza*, The army is under the artillery of the town; *Estó succedió debáxo de mis ventáνας*, This happened under my windows; *Los soldádos que estan debáxo de las armas*, The soldiers who are under arms; *Poner una cosa debáxo de llave*, To put something under the key; *Debáxo del sello real*, Under the royal seal. Observe, that this Preposition governs always the Genitive, without any exception.

These are the principal observations that the limits of this Grammar permit me to give upon this most essential part of speech. But all these rules will perhaps be sooner learned by the Reader, as they stand exemplified in the Dialogues hereafter.

LISTA de las Palábras;
que rigen Preposiciones:
de las Preposiciones re-
gidas; y por via de Ex-
emplo, de las Palábras
regidas de las Preposi-
ciones.

A.

Abalanzarse . á . los pelí-
gros,
Abandonarse . á la suerte,
Abocarse . con los suyos,
Abochornarse . . de algo,
Abogar . . por . . alguno,
Abordar una nave . a . con
otra,
Aborrecible . á . las gentes,
Aborrecido . . de . todos,
Abrasarse . . en . . deseos,
Abrirse . á con . sus confi-
dentes,
Abstenerse . . de . comer,
Abundar . de . en . riquezas,
Aburrido . de . su mala for-
tuna,
Abusar . de . la amistad,
Acabar . . de . . venir,
Acaecer (algo) . á . alguno,
Acaecer (algo) . . en . tal
tiempo,
Acalorarse . con . en . la dis-
puta,
Acceder . á . la opinion de
otro,
Accesible . á . los preten-
dientes,
Acerca . . de . este suceso,
Acercarse . del . peligro,
Acarcarse . al . amigo,
Acercarse . de . la lumbre,
Acertar . a . con . la casa,
Acogerse . . á . . alguno,
Acomodarse . con . alguno,
Acomodarse . al . dictamen,
de otro,

A LIST, containing the
Words which govern
the Prepositions: the
Prepositions governed;
and an Example to the
Words which are go-
verned by or govern
the Prepositions.

to rush on danger.

to abandon oneself to chance.

to confer with one's relations.

to be chagrined with anything.

to plead for any one.

to bring one ship to another.

hateful to the people.

detested by all.

to be inflamed with desires,

*to open oneself to one's confi-
dants.*

to abstain from eating.

to abound with, or in riches.

weary with one's ill fortune.

to abuse friendship.

to be just come.

something to happen to anyone.

to happen at such a time.

to grow warm in a dispute.

to accede to another's opinion.

accessible to pretenders.

about this business.

to approach the danger.

to approach a friend.

to sit by the fire.

to find out the house.

to have recourse to any one.

to settle oneself with any one.

*to conform oneself to another's
opinion.*

* A

Acompañarse

algo debáxo de la capa, To carry something under the cloak ; *Dormir debáxo de un árbol*, To sleep under a tree.

This Preposition is also made use of in the following sentences: *El ejército está debáxo del cañon de la plaza*, The army is under the artillery of the town; *Estó sucedió debáxo de mis ventáνας*, This happened under my windows ; *Los soldados que estan debáxo de las armas*, The soldiers who are under arms ; *Poner una cosa debáxo de llave*, To put something under the key ; *Debáxo del sello real*, Under the royal seal. Observe, that this Preposition governs always the Genitive, without any exception.

These are the principal observations that the limits of this Grammar permit me to give upon this most essential part of speech. But all these rules will perhaps be sooner learned by the Reader, as they stand exemplified in the Dialogues hereafter.